

Wizardry from the Dark Side of the Moon
By Karabo Bruce Elekwang

For my family. Keep on weaving. Remember to love always.

Chapter 1 - The Son of Green

I grew up in the wrong generation. I wonder what God was thinking perhaps yet it had doubts, resentment and its set of crises. God, perhaps felt that my presence was needed in the very generation and I shouldn't question when but rather why. Why would I do to change it? Better it? Would it for its own betterment? The answer - just keep being a wizard. I obviously had to be groomed and inducted into such a practice, harness and master it which is why there is a story to tell, it has its own logic, here it is.

Dr Eva Moore's Office
Knights Run
United States of America
1000 hours

"Xavier." called Eva. I was recalling a dream, zoned out during the session, had to wake up.

"A nightmare about dying. The sky darkened, I could breathe and was surrounded by trails of lifeless souls that can't catch a breath. I feel as if I doomed the world." I said.

"Dreams are intricate but they don't defy you. We suffer from insomnia over the constant thoughts of change, betterment and even personal sacrifice just to be idolized."

"So my depression is there because I am trying to seek attention?"

"No, it'd be more of you seeking yourself." she concluded. I was standing, sat down on her lounge chair and exhaled. Reminiscing on simpler days that did not need me to exact revenge nor think about it. Moore needed me to keep being honest with her once again, open the chambers of pain and possibilities of death.

"So, where to from here, I ask myself." I expressed. She made a note on her clipboard, paid attention to me again. I was restraining the actual placement of the problems I had.

"Well, I know it involves you being more reachable and less prompt to the thoughts that you are your problems. My best suggestion is that you speak towards your father." said Eva. I laughed at ridicule.

"I'd rather converse with a pack of wolves than ever talk to him." I said bluntly. I grew mad.

"I guess you don't want to speak about him for now then. It's too soon." she concluded.

"Would you blame me? He just stands there and look. Does nothing, says nothing."

"Xavier, ultimately -"

"I am him, I get it. I get how he and my mother are me but I don't seem to see how I feel unseen, unattended and of all things, unloved."

"You don't know that, they are your parents."

"And they pay you. So that you could be their cheerleader."

"No, you are wrong there - they don't pay me to persuade you to love them, they pay me so that I can fix you." she said. I felt ashamed in how she would answer me, kept quiet, with tears running down my cheeks. I stood up and went to the door and slowly opened it bravely, I had about 40 more minutes of therapy left but Eva understood why I wanted to leave and respect me enough to let me. Before I went out of the office I held one question left.

"Can you fix me still? I'm broken and keep falling into pieces." I asked, with a ripe face filled with pain, anguish and in the tradition of feeling overlooked. She breathed once and nodded.

"Yes, Xavier, I can and I will. No matter what. Have a good day. For now, walk it off" she replied calmly. I left her office, left the building and narrowed down streets with my tears to hide as the skies let down a drizzle of rain, this camouflaged my woes. The whole process of seeing myself being pitied for, being concerned about was futile - ultimately, I never knew contentment, how waking up and smiling at life felt like. I lost touch of that feeling and it has been years now. My upbringing could have implied that I would become a warrior but I turned to a veteran in a never-ending war which was disguised as the pursuit of happiness. We, as humans, were lost, perhaps still are because we compromise. Compromise years in order to see all of the notions that society insists on. Remember how you dreamed and now because of the dusts created by politics, you decided to resort to compartmentalize them all. That's what I saw happen - my fate being sealed. With nowhere to shelter me, I walked up to a sign that was about poetry nights at a local coffee shop and they commence 3 weeks from that day. I shook my head, knowing that there was, perhaps a chance where I could air out the negativity. I ran across a few streets but it was by fate - I winded up at the parking lot of Morshower's Public Library.

Morshower's Public Library

1247 hours

My clothes were damp,I seemed far from being a young boy when I walked into the library. Mr. Morshower was near the entrance, speaking to Otto whom was a new intern. Otto looked scruffy,had about at least a small fortune in his bank account because of his accolades in activism. Morshower was rigid however,gave orders to young Otto. I let the raindrops coarse through my hair and just started to freeze without showing as my skin wrinkled itself because of how cold the atmosphere was,Otto was dismissed and Morshower spotted me.

" Jesus,Xavier,you can't run in the rain." he jokingly said. Morshower had an inner-child yet I felt to just be blunt.

" Sorry but I just need to collect a few books then leave to my home." I said with respect." Well,you might well also get a flu shot,a sack of oranges and a rental copy of movies that went straight to home media. Look,are you sure you are okay,kiddo?" asked Morshower out of concern. I could have shook by head but decided to nod it a couple of times.

" It's just the winds." I calmly said. Morshower handed over these pills to me called Nyvictron which were effective and they were always prescribed by my family doctor in many occasions. Modern medicine could not heal this spiritual wound even if the medicine was meant to cast away alien forces I would say are migraines and seasonal flu - I still would rather take walks than talk about my problems. I took the pills and scoured my eyes around the shelves we passed. Morshower was concerned,as he was an uncle towards me and recalled the time my family first found a home in the town,my father was young,had to take care of us and in a sense - he never made time for his eldest son,me. It seemed as if death caught his eye and felt I could comprehend with the absence that he tried making up for now. My parentage seemed vague and so was the trust I would be a better father or perhaps the times I would spend with my own daughter will never be enough and they will be resentment,this is why I barely slept.

Contemplating on the future. In that surface of time,slowed down,not wrinkled and glass slipper pure...I saw her. Her hair was braided,her eyes stuck to the pages and words she recited and her lips showed the blossoming lines of the material she read. Morshower strutted to his office for mere moments,he had to give me the books I needed to be shipped in. I kept looking at her,wondering which silly line I should say to see her smile. I decided on it,it seems tardy and it could place her in the obligation to simply just walk away.

" Just say hi to her and hope she smiles back." I said to myself and flexed around my neck,exhaled. I took a step and felt a psychological thud,it rang strictly and convincingly only in my mind,as if I was fooled into believing something fell. My instincts scratched and clawed me to not move for some reason. It was distant manipulation of some sort and it rivaled my own thoughts. She packed up,she saw me and stared,I stared back,felt heat from the revelation that she took notice of my existence. I was zoned in.

" Xavier?" called Morshower,he was right next to me with a handful of books. In seconds and for seconds,I turned to him,saw the books and turned to her but she was gone. I scouted around as uncle Morshower raised an eyebrow,I went a row north from where I was standing and didn't see anything.

" Um,Xavier - did you make new friends in the library about,I don't a minute ago?" he asked.

" Friends? Not really,I just...I thought I could make her one." I replied. Morshower nodded with disbelief written across his face and knew where she was. I was adviced by Dreena to never ever sell myself short,instead make sure whomever is the young girl I'd meet and drown my pride over my feelings for and create an empire with...cares. Cares about how I recall each fiber of memory I have with her since the moment I got acquainted and fell off as being weird,never pretentious but real enough to even have a Cum Laude at being myself. Cares about when heart aches whenever the universe deals a vicious card in the sordid game of life. Cares that I care for her. There was a curiosity in my soul,of why was I so desolate to keep reading more and more books,was it boredom or was it all weaved for I should keep being controlled by the efforts of time as I felt older than the day before but younger as an intellect. As requested,my uncle has managed to get hold of the seven books I prescribed for me. All of them had an aura of soul searching. I decided to take a few months,call it a hiatus if you will and try to make into a crime-bred society where teenagers are easily lost in the world. So there were stories I had to read,of those who have gone astray then saw their paths and noted where they stumbled. The secret billionaires,dressed up as an average joe but accidentally create multi-millions. Recalling the ambitions,it was about being in the phase of awaiting the silver linings of the dark clouds and I had to go to the front desk regardless of how Morshower overlooks everything,administration is administration. I marched to the front desk where old Mrs Gretter would scan the books to be taken out. I loudly opened my velcro wallet to present my library card then sharply exhaled. Everything took its course and waved goodbye to uncle Morshower,swung open the front of the library and walked outside. I got an incoming call from my father. I stared at my phone,knew I'd do anything but answer to it. My father feels guilt,remorse and felt he was obliged to know if I hadn't found the guts to finally kill myself since we resided in a small city but neighbors knew neighbors,so he was more worried about his reputation than my health. Typical but there was more to the life he lived and I would understand it as I got into the habits of weaving spells and pure lies. I

walked to the parking lot, at a far-off bench, there was a mark on a tree. I tried to look closer to it and scurried over to look at it then I tripped and scrapped my knee. I sharply exclaimed and propped it.

"Do you need help with that?" a female voice said. I looked up, hesitant that I even drew anyone's attention as I felt like a ghost at most of the times. It was the braided girl I spotted at the library earlier that simply vanished, she seemed to have left the building in a fashion which I couldn't truly grasp. Nonetheless, she was there and offered to help me. I mentally read off her own front cover of her bag that she was Aquilla Rhodes. The name fell off into the deep corner of my mind. I might have twigged my knee which led to the fall and the scrapping of my knee so I couldn't stand. I cleared my throat and responded.

"Um, do you know where I can get a doctor?" I answered. She helped me up and propped me as I started limping.

"I'll call in the one I know." she said with a smile as she made the call while I awkwardly kept my eyes around the views of the small city and in a tardy result, I scratched my hair and she'd stare and laugh lightly. The ice was broken while we strutted towards a medical facility.

Chernobyl, Ukraine
2000 hours

In the world, we held the recommendation that evil exists, it threatens, walks and breathes amongst us as well. Lucias Crimson was in the abandoned city of Priptya about an hour before and nested at Chernobyl. He wore his shades and look into the constellations that were peeping, stretched out his arm to the skies and start to pledge in his Native language that his mother taught him. It was a pledge based on a troubling time in his people's village. It said "To the Moon, our souls will reach and we shall smile again". Crimson was interrupted by an alarming call from one of his wizards, Hannah Johnson.

"Lucias, I have news." she began.

"I'm at my holy place, Hannah." he replied.

"Milo found a lead on the book." she said anxiously. Walking down the stairs, Lucias' chuckled with disbelief.

"It was completely destroyed back in the 80s, we weren't even born at the time, it's completely impossible for it to exist." he preached.

"Open your email." she said calmly. She would wait and Lucas would in an impatient manner - open his email from Milo which showed a page from a book the spoke of.

"Parker's not false" she asked.

"Where on Earth is he right now?" he asked angrily. There was a blank moment in the call.

"He's following up on a lead." she said.

ER Section
Knights Run Hospital
1313 hours

Arriving in a chatter, Aquilla had her parents already prompt to assess me. Both Aquilla Rhodes' parents were doctors at the prestigious Knights Run Hospital and they both met in Medical School, dated and married a few years after. They were, as I would have thought, Caucasian.

"Your parents are both doctors?!" I asked her in awe.

"Well, I don't wanna brag..." she goofed around. We limped towards them, they were welcoming, didn't felt in the need to be hostile at me.

"Hello, young man." greeted Aquilla's father whom was bearded and always had a clipboard. He noted all that transpired in his life. I cleared my throat and stretched my hand to shake his hand.

"Hello, Dr Rhodes... just to be honest, not every girl makes me meet their parents the same day I ask her out for coffee." I joked. They would laugh, it was genuine and it was needed to be said.

"Well, Xavier, our daughter isn't like every girl which you have spoken to." her mother said.

"Wait, did you even ask me out?" she openly asked me, I raised then dropped my shoulders as a sign of not recalling.

"You are something else, Green." she said in positive disbelief.

"It's almost as if I can pull rabbit out of hats." I commented.

"Okay, young Houdini, a hospital bed you go..." commanded her father. I waltzed into the area while Aquilla stood with her mother.

"Do you see a future in this boy?" she asked her. Aquilla kept quiet and roamed for an answer.

"I don't know, he's a little, well, different." she would reply to her mother.

1327 hours

I sat on the bed, wandering my eyes around and kept pointing at certain things. I awaited my scans from Dr Rhodes, at that time, my phone was on the charger and it was about to peak in its battery storage, my father tried calling again and I humbly rose up, picked it up and contemplated if I should answer then the curtain were slightly opened, the call dropped. Dr Rhodes return along with his wife and daughter.

"Alright, Green. You just sprang your ankle and just scraped your knee. So you'll be ruled out for just three weeks, sorry if you had any sports to attend to at Yale." he confirmed.

"Oh, I don't go to Yale anymore." I said. They kept quiet, I might have tipped over the chances of approval.

"It's all complicated why." I continued.

"It's okay, lad. Every man goes astray sometimes but it's about his return that makes me immortal." he comforted.

"Thanks, Doctor." I replied. How rude am I not to mention names, Aquilla's father was named Bertram and her mother was Allegra.

"Now, all you need is just to not run, jump or even take any other fatal incidences for the 3 weeks." ordered Allegra. I nodded repeatedly.

"That can't be difficult to do..." I commented. I was handed the medication, zipped my backpack open then tossed them inside. Gladly, with my father's medical aid, I was covered from all costs. It was time to leave, perhaps and I didn't even feel pre-empted to ask Aquilla for her contacts, mind you, her parents were there. I pitched instead, a date idea.

"How 'bout 3 weeks from now, we go out, Aquilla?" I asked her openly with her parents there. She felt ecstatic, couldn't even utter a word.

"Let's just say her curfew is 10 pm and we need to know where you are all going." her father said. I smiled, nodded, becoming a blatant optimist.

"Alright, I'll call you, tomorrow, I promise, we'll talk then." I said as she scribbled out her number off a piece of paper and handed it to me which I clinched. I stood up, waved goodbye and walked out of the hospital calmly. I lost sight of the Rhodes family about 15 paces after when I walked away. At the parking lot, I kept walking with the breeze that felt as if there was a brewing thunderstorm that could take place in a matter of 3 or 4 hours from now. Before I became a climatologist, my brother King from the east side of Knights Run decided to be a therapist as he called me in that moment, I'd answer.

"Hello, King" I greeted.

"Young boy, how are you?" he replied.

"I'm a little all over, both the good and the bad reasoning for it." I said.

"Alright, I see, anyway, look, I need to talk to you, brother to brother." he said.

"Okay, King, problem is that you are always busy and I practically keep myself busy with waiting for college application answers, reciting where did I went wrong back in my high school days and the classic tantrums." I obliged.

"Xavier, I'm your brother, I have your back and you have mine but I need to know - are you still on drugs?" he asked me.

"What? Drugs? No!" I replied.

"Be honest with me and I'll help you." he asked me.

"King, I've been clean for months now. I'm off the cocaine, marijuana, alcohol and even nicotine." I said.

"Then why are there cops raiding your room as we speak?" he commented.

"What? I'll be there in an hour." I said, I knew I couldn't sprint so I called in a cab and there was one that stopped and I stepped into it and told the driver of my location which was my address, 10 Fitzgerald Avenue.

11 Fitzgerald Avenue
Knights Run

1507 hours

Milo was wearing a grey hoodie and was communicating regarding my arrival, he was at a neighbour's lemonade stand where the neighbour's 5-year-old daughter whom needed the money for her goldfish's fish food. She was explaining Milo how it led to the discovery of her lemonade stand. Lizzie, her name, could not have kept quiet while Milo had to signal out the team. They were all strategically placed around and along the street for everything to seem casual. There was a simple key objective, a simple task and a volatile distraction being played that could have found me in a debacle I could not navigate from. There were about four of this people in the operation, it was well thought of and all I had to do is fall into my usual routine of things and finally - they gain possession of what they were seeking. Lizzie reached the story's conclusion.

"...so when I got Mr Gills from the pet shop, I knew that I can be a good grown up one day." she ended the story with a smile. Milo held a lot of criticism for her reasoning, Lizzie still believed in Santa Claus and she raved about wanting to grow up. How naïve she was, concluded Milo and he had to comment on her plans. He became sentimental and placed a smile on his face towards her.

"Don't grow up fast, just grow up maturely." he said and then placed a 100 dollar bill on her stand and walked away towards the sidewalk of my house, awaiting for his plan to unfold. There was traffic in the radio conversation linked to Umi, Lance and Dominic whom have been mobilized to help Milo capture what he discovered. I was about less than a minute or so from appearing and it was crucial for their sake that I lose my composure with towards the authorities and they planted substances in my room somehow days prior. He kept pecking into believing I would be frantic about the search warrant, the questioning and the hiccups it would do to my general routine. All that was needed to see happen was that to happen and the plot unfolds. Milo awaited...everything was in order. On cue, I'd be pulled over by the taxi driver at the sidewalk across my house, I cautiously stepped out of the vehicle and carried my backpack. A sense, a voice inside me told me to wait and firstly become grounded in thoughts. I sharply exhaled and steadily walked across the street to my house. Got into the yard, my St. Bernard would sprint to me and I'd place my palm on his snout and kept walking, opened the front door and there were a few police officials present. My St. Bernard, Rufus, would shut its jaw and I wandered my eyes around, across and far from the front door at kitchen, my whole family were being questioned. King was at the living room, making calls and answering for a debacle in his line of work. I took a step towards the kitchen, the detective called me.

"Xavier Green, I'm Detective Cunningham of the Knights Run Police Department." he introduced himself. He looked like he was in his 30s, wasn't thinning and always had a jacket on.

"What it is all of this?" I softly asked with a confusion engulfed face. King hung up and placed down his phone, went to the family as the detective held his notepad and which he would ask for my alibi of where I was at a certain date and time.

"Xavier, I just have a few questions to ask." he declared.

"Do I need a lawyer for this? I mean, I don't know about all of this, I've been clean for months and now this warrant seems - discriminating." I said.

"Okay, you are right, this warrant seems discriminating and lacks respect. It was just an anonymous tip-off about a few hours ago." he said.

"Thank you, Detective 'cause the last thing I need is this to ruin the mood." I said.

"Your fingertips, Xavier." he remarked.

"What about them?" asked King.

"I'm sorry, Xavier but we need to take you in for questioning."

"What? Why?"

"It's just protocol, okay? We need to give you questions."

"Why not here?"

"Well, look, Xavier - you are not being held under arrest, I just need to ask what is needed to be asked but I have to let you know what we are dealing with here." said Detective Cunningham. I turned to King to seek his approval, he nodded so I exhaled firstly.

"Alright, I will go to the Precinct with you." I said. Detective Cunningham rounded and called off the search in the debt of my co-operation. I exited my home alone, offering that no family member must accompany me, it felt a lot more sensible given that I was ushered to a case and that this did not note me as a suspect. Walking across the yard, I took notice of my fingertips of my left hand, flicked my wrist and stared. There was a certain trait in the prints - they had a scarred mark of some sort. It was as if I purposefully tried grasping a razor sharp lid with them. I brought my tips closer and reckoned that they were tampered with biologically. The very scars had a certain and precise establishment, blending in brassy. Milo took notice of what I studied. I was in possession of my backpack as they

place me at the back of Detective Cunningham's car, dismally derailing what Milo had in mind of how to executive the plan.

"We have a problem..." a female voice said over the network that Milo created to speak to the others.

"I know, I need to conjure a spell." he consulted.

"Bad idea. This is meant to be all low-key even the extraction." she replied.

"When I orchestrated a search at his household - it wasn't meant to always stay quiet." he replied. He began the conjuring.

"Don't. Milo, I will reflect it back at you." she threatened. He aborted the energy invested. He kept quiet and held his thoughts to see how he could still be ten steps into the future, all concealed without my knowledge being in the light of the incidents.

"Okay, no spell on him but I need spells on his rooms, we'll need about four of them in harmony, everyone, to Green's backyard." he announced. No one replied or agreed over the line for confirmation. Milo questioned the sudden silence, even when it also the illustrious remarks of Umi went mute. Milo cleared his throat loudly to have their attention which was always there - in his sweaty palms at most time.

"Milo, just hand over the Vulcan Wire and we'll be sorted. Just the three of us. Your reality spells lose touch of things." commented Chance over the network. Milo would recall that at the base, on his bedside drawer - was the Vulcan Wire in the very minute.

"Oh, boy..." Umi said.

"You forgot it?" Lance asked.

"Yes but I know of substitutes for it. Everyday tools and so on." Milo spoke.

"I am not going to risk my life for humans at all." boldly said Dominic whom was the fourth person on this now Godforsaken caper attempt which has failed to launched over the nurtured disruption of my lack of arrogance and Milo's mental ignorance on what was needed. The lines were over-sank, Milo had the final say.

"Let's regroup and tell Lucias at our base, over and out." he concluded, took his earpiece off and took with the wind.

Interrogation Room
Knights Run Precinct
1541 hours

I was not handcuffed nor intimidated by the official, perhaps never thought I would be interrogated to be honest. I kept zooming at my fingertips and wondered which habit led to them having such insightful yet almost miniature calligraphy of how my fingerprints were. Detective Cunningham finally walked in, I quickly placed my chiselled hands in my pockets which had my library card and one of the pills I had to take as a dosage if the worst would happen, I'd be able to place the knee's pain at bay. Cunningham sat down, he didn't have his badge nor gun with him. He presented a file in front of me and then took a moment to begin why I was called into the Precinct.

"Xavier, I'm not talking to you as a cop, I'm talking to you as a father and as a concerned parent right now." he began, it all struck me more ominous than perhaps a far-fetched plan of some sort. I nodded once and kept paying attention.

"There are so many acts I can protect my children from so many dangers. Crime. Corruption. But I am only human so there are certain forces I can never be able to protect our city from. Forces that are larger than life, more intricate than our minds and very dangerous." he said. I was common to the dialect he spoke about, my first but rather steep assumption was that he meant organized crime then it clicked on how I my prints were not going to fall into such a category, this was completely momentous. I, Xavier Green, could be inducted into an investigation of such present forces.

"You make it sound as if it's all nuclear, Detective." I raised a point. He opened the docket right away, it held so much images and footnotes. There were showing multiple places on Earth, multiple destroyed vehicles and scars from people that were caused by anything the medical community has ever seen.

"It's all supernatural." he proposed. The images were compiled, about over hundreds from different forensics around the world. I'm speaking South Africa, Australia, Denmark, Argentina and even Mexico. I felt as if crop circles were nothing compared to what I saw.

"So all of this happened?" I asked.

"Yes, under the radar even. Whomever is behind it all is readying something perilous." he speculated.

"Perilous? Why not hope that they are planning a huge presidential birthday party magic show?" I recommended.

"It's 'cause they are stealing nuclear substances from these places." he replied. It was all authentic, the suggested terrorism, the planning and execution of this union of people whom held something powerful that I could classify as

a hoax or urban legend. I rocked my thoughts of all the speculations meant. This all took place in the few seconds into the revelations of this revolutionary threat. The thoughts spelling out genocide then grew to fall back, I had a concern - why was I summoned by the detective?

"Wait...why am I here?" I asked in fear. The scars deemed light. They were not noticed, they were more of an illumination that might have not even be real, and perhaps...I kept the hallucinations that where stored through the years. However, no, that all happened but the Detective was concerned about his reasoning and it was asked.

"Xavier, do you know anything about these mercenaries?" he asked. I would just brush off the accusation that I might be in cahoots with such radicals but there would be a pardoned absence if I would not dwell into these theories with a view into the strange. I'd lie then create, fabricate a destiny then perhaps be a glorified bait towards such offenders then I knew that Cunningham have pre-empted concepts of if I have a link towards these crimes which is why he ushered the situation at hand rather than arrest me right away. He had a hunch of some sort. I needed to be more itching about his insight rather than just what was introduced. All I knew that they exist, the pictures were authentic so it led to why I was brought in. I weighed how the room was, it will tilt in my favour if I concealed my knowledge of most, it wasn't obstructing justice or, in any degree, perjury either. How would they prove these claims and facts when I stoop into denial throughout the questioning, all I needed was to be naïve and not become sarcastic about how far-fetched everything presented seemed. So I gleamed into such a place of flickering thoughts and answer.

"No, not at all. I mean, all of this seems pretty heavy if you asked me." I replied.

"You are almost 20 years, right?"

"Yeah, that's right."

" Well,two weeks back. A child in Los Angeles, a little boy,about 7 years,got killed in one of these crusades,he was brought in the picture as a civilian and he died. Now,how do you feel like his parents,no,wait - elder brother felt?" he asked me. I now kept quiet. This all felt personal for Cunningham and I just kept waving off the answers that were vague and unneeded. I stuttered trying to answer,words could not mold what I had to say. I might have needed a glass of tap water,there was empathy in what was disclosed. Imagine it,rather yet believe it - I thought was extremely human,running from tendencies of human nature at the most. I reached a prominent answer saturated with the belief that all will be well.

" His elder brother feels gone,perhaps off on his own,as if...he wants to exact revenge but - he won't. He doesn't need to. Look,I get how important this all is but I mean,I am just a black kid whom is trying to do soul searching and be institutionalized once again." I answered. The aura of magnetic fear diminished,leaving me immuned from any accusation there is. My prominent answer equated one question remaining - what was it with my fingertips that dragged me to the Precinct where I had my backpack with. Cunningham was not trying to fabricate charges or place me in a bad light,I was a lead of some kind regarding the acts of the supernatural mercenaries. I knew nothing,saw nothing of change,I was not going through asking what he had. My mind shunned me into not dabbling in the facts and rather be humble and be cautious. I kept quiet and so would Cunningham. There was found footage. It was questioned on its authenticity and one could wonder how he got hold of us but the footage held nothing that constructive nor plausible,there were explosions and more frantic explosions. The footage was played,there was clear sound and none of the footage was longer than a minute. He had about 17 separate films all from aaround the world. From countries such as Ireland,South Africa,Iran,Germany and even Greenland. All of these places held a link - they visited them with intent towards plotting something. Just had to wonder if perhaps my subconscious knew a point to present because the human mind can go through so much until it is convinced that nothing is meant to make sense. So in the progression,I was released but Cunningham said that if I knew anything that could conceal them - I'd be charge for perjury and obstructing the law. I used to see it as a bluff but - the man of the people never goes back on such words and as I traveled back with a taxi cab,I asked myself once again,the diluted question - Do I know anything about the mercenaries?

Morshower's Public Library
2210 hours

In that hour of the night, before I was asleep from the exhaustion and the prescription I took instead of traditionally staying up at night and plotting where to from there with life. Something perhaps sinister and it had belief could charter change. There was a figure that gathered around at the parking lot. It was cloaked,wore a veil and shadowed so much that it didn't need to share at all. It went to the exact place where I scraped my right knee. It was ventilating heavily,still cloaked even if it was in the pitch black nightfall of Knights Run. There was a dry splat of my blood that soaked into the asphalt,ironically never been washed away by the rain nor the moist air altered nothing of any

sorts. Its eyes illuminated then it stretched out its arm and placed its hand out with the hand acting as if they were claws then - it conjured an energy of some sort, the existence of wizardry was more than alive and he proved this. He conjured a spell. There was a seal stretching around his fingertips and what the spell would do is raise my blood from its soaked phase and recreate it as if it were my blood and in the flesh, there it was. My DNA in the strands of blood and it admired it.

"I need to find you, Son..." he said in a positive light and he showed a concealed beaker where my blood smoothly placed itself and cocooned there. He'd place it away then walk into the city and vanish, without a trace.

The Dark Side Of The Moon

2247 hours

In their domain, Milo and the others were lying around at their home. Like most commonly, Milo was an insomniac but in a polite resolution, he could keep awake and not create a ruckus in the dead of night which was why while everyone was fast asleep - Milo was in the kitchen, loitering but had a bowl of cereal that was heated. He was trying to rectify where he went wrong because of how some tools were left behind but the raid was fabricated legitimately. He also questioned why would the police evacuate me away from my house within minutes after I arrive. Was I troublesome? Was I caught for another crime? These were all sketched as possibilities in Milo's well-received and intellectual mind.

"That kid, Xavier - something isn't normal about his presence..." he said to himself. Milo placed his bowl down and bit his nails in the correct worrying of how this planned heist would not be as coded as he hoped before.

"Speaking of presence, why would you not respect the presence of my authority, Parker?" a voice harshly asked from across the room. Milo lifted his chin, stopped biting his nails and was in shock. Standing there - was Lucias Crimson, the sole leader of the so-called supernatural mercenaries.

"Lucias, I...er, you got my email, right?" asked Milo half-jokingly.

"Yes and here's my warning," replied Lucias.

"What warning?" asked a completely lost Milo. Lucias stretched arm to the same level as Milo's neck. It had a seal as well, his signature spell was conjured and it started to strain Milo from afar. It choked Milo and Lucias would lift Milo's physical body, suspending it from the surface. The spell wasn't complete, it held certain stages and Lucias only needed to cross three of these stages to kill Milo. All of the commotion made Umi snap out of her slumber.

"Oh, this is the warning..." Milo said in a very weak and fading voice.

"What we do isn't a hobby, it isn't something that is meant for everyone and what we do needs to be contained away from the public," lashed out Lucias.

"We destroyed two buses, filled with civilians about a few months ago and I don't know, some of us are on television right now? With all due respect, we are all over and the world will know soon," he justified.

"Milo, you are testing my patience," he cited.

"I can find The Book, we both know this," said Milo.

"Well then, I'll pick up from where you left off, Parker," he replied. His seal began spinning around, igniting the spell's fully forced capabilities. Lucias stopped.

"You know, when I first met you, Lucias - I said 'Let's be a team and we will reach the common goal together.', we are a team and if I need to stab you in the back for our MVP's sake, trust me - I will," reminded Umi who made her way to the kitchen quietly and aimed a Seal directly at Lucias' vertebrae. Lucias chuckled and let Milo down, dissolving his own seal then dropping his arm.

"Now, I know what Milo did was a little overboard but you were at Chernobyl while Hannah is still grieving so we had to do what we had to do. It all took guts," she told him. Umi dissolved her own spell as well. Umi stepped in front of Lucias and held her guard down by rinsing a glass of water then reaching out to get a milk carton from the fridge.

"Umi, you are correct, I'll look the other cheek with all of this," he said. Milo exhaled while Umi held a new expression of relief which was thinking "Thank God." with Lucias' decision. Lucias would not conclude with just that, he had a command.

"You have a hundred days to get the Book now, Milo," Lucias notified. Milo nodded repeatedly, agreeing to the term that was placed. Lucias walked away from the room and the tension was diluted. Milo dropped his neck with the insinuation that this task was extremely perilous, noting that he knew nothing of me other than my last name, home address and persona. Umi poured a glass of milk and held it to his chest. Milo lightly grasped the glass and would take a sip and reminisce.

" Remember the time I let you fall when I was meant to support you in the Truth Fall about two years back?" he asked Umi whom was tidying up the fridge. She closed it and wandered the question.

" Yeah,why?" she replied.

" It's 'cause I hate you,Umi Bonaparte." he said so simply and began to walk off. Umi sighed,she knew the conclusion of why Milo would say such an expression,there had been an aspect Milo lost and no amount of wizardry at the time would revive her. Before long,in a matter of moments,Umi would retire for the night as well.

10 Fitzgerald Avenue
2300 hours

I began to call it a night within my room. I was jotting down stories and concepts on my perhaps outdated computers. I moved from desk and dived onto my bed then exhaled. I was looking into the ceiling,squinting and snarling at it. Wouldn't pass out despite how daunting the day and traveling was. It was a few weeks ago that I suffered sleep paralysis and I was still remedying the shock of how it ceased to be. Then I began making up reasoning of why most of my young adulthood was completed jagged with chaos and trauma,the scenarios kept on fluctuating and asking myself if I ever was built to find the good within humanity as well. All the events held flash backs. It grew stressing,I heard screams within my mind,it all escalated then I heard an electric spike which distracted those thoughts then turn to mental whispers. The spike seemed timed. It resided from my backpack that wasn't searched through at the time of questioning and had books from the Library. I stood up and walked to it,reached out and grasped one of the books - it was written "Property Of Carter" on the front cover. The spike resided from it,my gut predicted. I read out the first page...

" The 21 Century Guide To Wizardry." I read out and read it until ten minutes prior to midnight.

Chapter 2 - The Elemental

10 Fitzgerald Avenue
1000 hours

It had been several days since I had possession of the book I would constantly read at most in that year. I had it everywhere I went, would and never would I even not recall reading it. It had exactly 1000 pages and had information that I soaked in. With this being in mind, I passed out the night before. I lost track of which day and even time. Unconscious in my room, the house was not attended to. Then a thud was heard, I snapped out of sleep and ran to the front door, swung open then there was Christoph Crostelly whom actually struck the tree to wake me up from the vast distance that would be at my room.

"Morning Chris." I greeted.

"Xavier..." he replied.

"Why didn't you knock at the door?" I asked.

"Well, if I did, robbers would walk in and steal." he replied with brass. That was classic Christoph, resorting to a ruckus. I swung the need to reply to Christoph on why he would say such.

"Let me guess, you are running an errand?" I asked.

"Yes, I am. I am here to deliver the minutes from the last Community meeting that your folks weren't present to." he said then handed them over.

"Will give it to them." I answered. The envelope was sealed and carried weight as well.

"What were they discussing? Racism?" I asked.

"Hell no, just the issues of land rights and some other daunting issues. It's all in the envelope." he explained.

"Is the Mayor sealed in the envelope too because it is heavy." I expressed. There was a surge echoing from my room. I zoned out, for mere seconds. Christoph said a few words about how frail the concern of how young Knights Run's youth is.

"Xavier?" he called. I began recalling how I have a therapy session with Eva Moore in a matter of an hour and I had a stained white shirt on, the pitch black pants that still had creases and no sense of which day it was. I had to be pardoned from seeing Eva today, perhaps postpone or even cancel.

"I need to make a call." I openly said.

"Best get on the line, you have a phone book?"

"Yeah, yeah...but I don't need a phonebook, I need to explain." I said and spontaneously walked to the house. I would walk back outside and dismiss Christoph.

"Thank you, Chris." I said. He threw a peace sign in the air and ran along. I never got to ask young Christoph why was he not at school, never crossed my mind. I went to the landline and frantically dialled Eva's personal numbers. It rang, kept ringing, I was sorting out my phrases for when she answers. It was penned into agreeing that I was at fault and was dealing with a book which was the distraction from reality. Her phone kept ringing, ringing and expectedly ringing, about 27 seconds later, she answered.

"Hello Xavier." she answered. I was frantic yet poised.

"Eva, I am going to be really late but I'll be there." I said.

"Nurse your hangover and I'll shift you to 3 pm." she replied.

"Hangover? No, not at all. I was researching for the past -"

"Few weeks?"

"No, days. It's been days, I think, anyway, now I am okay, I'll make it at 3 pm then." I said. I walked to the blinds and looked out of the window.

"Okay, well, it's almost as if you are writing your thesis for your Doctorate. It's just that things you have been taking part in don't add up, there was the trip to the Precinct and now you decide to begin dating again." she pointed out. I dropped the blinds and recalled of how she knew about Aquilla and I meeting days before.

"You know about her?" I asked.

"Yeah, not her name but you called me about it this past Saturday morning at 4 am." she said. I was phased from remembering why I called at that hour. All of it seemed dimmed. Purposefully so. The surge spiked once again.

"Okay, I'm sorry about the late call, I'll explain everything today when I get there."

"Alright, Xavier, travel safe."

"Goodbye Eva."

"Goodbye Xavier." she said and I hung up. I had to keep track of what I froze out of my consciousness for the past few days, if not weeks by the sense of it. I replayed all of the stored voicemail messages. One resided from Bertram

whom was checking up on my knee's status then Morshower had about ten messages which were all crammed into needing me summoned as soon as possible.

" I need to go to the library, see Eva and call Aquilla. All of that, today." I said. The prep was the running of a gauntlet into being back on time.

The Dark Side Of The Moon

1027 hours

Milo began planning for an extortion of a crucial item that he was given limited time to obtain. For a person whom could be killed in a matter of over 3 months, Milo was not rattled nor cautioned like the night the condition was given. By the impression Milo gave, he was left normal and not even in the edge of panic. Strutting to the living room where the meeting was held, Milo journeyed. About an hour or two before, Hannah returned since she left to her hometown. The entire collective was whole once again and they could attempt any caper. Everyone was seated, all holding a mug of a hot beverage even Umi herself. There was chatter until Milo was present and they all began.

" Morning everyone." Milo greeted them.

" Morning Milo." replied Umi

" Parker." said Lucias while the rest cleared their throat and faked coughs in the eerie feeling not to reply. Milo didn't outburst, as always, he would concur to insulting the silent and vaguely problematic.

" Before we have to do a mugging at some random black kid, I'd like to welcome back Hannah who went to the Burlesque she grew up in and made it back without catching anything new." Milo announced.

" Milo, I will cut you open then stuff you with garbage and sow you back again so when you say trash like that, you can be excused." she threatened.

" Wow, she can speak, that's new. Well, look, I doubt that's going to happen if the most impressive thing you have ever done is... oh, wait, nothing of you do is impressive." replied Milo.

" Ouch!" interjected Lance.

" Do a cartwheel for that married man and father of three, will ya? I'll probably rephrase what I just said." he added on.

" Okay, enough Milo!" pleaded Umi, Milo was at a halt but Hannah sparked eyes that ran into saying that if she earned an opportunity to kill Milo, she will take it. It was not jokingly but half-joking perhaps. Then all of what would be said by Parker was said and now what had to be attended was the planning for the raid.

" Now that all is in order, what do we know?" asked Dominic whom wasn't slightly amused about Milo's insults towards Hannah.

" Well, thanks to the fight I had about ten months ago with the authorities of a city called Athens, I proved that the book exists. Meaning that he exists too." Milo said.

" Okay, noted... what do we know about the book and on whom might have it?" asked Lucias.

" Well, I had some findings and ran into a few names. All pointless until I read a guy called Wes Parker. He studied Astronomy and passed number one in his class, interestingly enough, he never showed up to his graduation." revealed Milo.

" Was he too busy conjuring to attend?" asked Lance.

" No, he was too busy concealing himself. Wes Parker can't be found right now, he's been gone, for months now. Without a trace. But there were bits and pieces left behind. He wrote an open letter on the balance of power and control and mailed it to a small city's facility on the night before his graduation." Milo said.

" Okay, so you assumed Wes cloaked the book using the open letter?" asked Umi

" No." said Milo.

" Then what? Why did Wes write the letter?" asked Hannah.

" Wes sent it then donated the book. The facility that received the letter is known as Morshower Public Library." concluded Milo. There were goosebumps of how near they have managed to be so near to the book, it'd be only a matter of days to finally gain possession of the object. But Lucias was not as positive as the others. This wasn't negativity, just the reality of his perspective yet he'd go to any and all means to locate it. Milo sensed the anxiety of landing at Knights Run and weaving enough spells to return with the book and celebrate the capture, there were all in the sense of believing that the task would be a lot more about patience and not about concealing the supernatural at all.

" Parker is one smart son of a gun." commented Dominic, applauding the efforts he made.

" So all we need to do is interrogate a few regulars and the staff then we can get it?" asked Hannah.

" No,it'd take forever,let alone more than 100 days. The town is like a small city,the population is dense and there are other neighbouring towns which insist on using the very same library,they treat the place like Hollywood,I swear. Well,except for the drugs and women,there's literature all over. I mean,heck,the library houses a lot of people." reasoned Milo.

" Then I should a Rover to seek out the one who has it." suggested Lucias. There was shiver in the room and they all turned to him. There were two factors about a Rover that sought that it was not meant for this caper. Firstly,a Rover is meant to kill and secondly,this creature does not care about collateral damage,it creates a rampage when it's on a trail. Sending a Rover felt heartless to do so without it being the only option.

" Don't you just send a Rover to a person you want dead?" asked Umi out of concern.

" It's overqualified but I'm surely prepared to jot it down a bit. I need whom ever has the book in a coma when I do." replied Lucias.

" Out of curiosity,what's the Rover's body count?" asked Hannah

" 1995." said Lucias. Dominic was stunned at the body count while Hannah kept quiet completely in shock.

" Well,a Rover isn't needed." pointed out Milo.

" Why,Milo?" asked Umi.

" Well,we'll just wait to see whom is going through the book's syptoms then we can just snatch it from the person. It's that simple."

" Symptoms?"

" Yeah,syptoms. I mean,you are carrying the world's most dangerous book ever written,there's meant to be signs that show it."

" Namely?"

" Well,we have the irises straining and changing into somewhat more nocturnal color. The person will have vast dreams about the world of the supernatural and initially cannot stay conscious of what's a figment and what belongs to reality. There a lot more from there. Oh,and the Green Smoke vein effect." said Milo.

" Enough,Milo. Just find it. Time is not on your side. You are all dismissed." ordered Lucias. Milo and the others weaved spells,countless to somewhat,arrive in the small town moments after.

1510 hours

Dr Moore's Office

Eca had to bear with me,I was late because of a debacle of whether I should go with "Property Of Carter" to the therapy session or coccon it safely in my room - and now,I held it with me when I stormed into her office.

" I'm sorry I am late." I ourburst.

" Xavier,relax,we can talk for longer than your usual time." she revealed

" Oh,that's great. I,er...I will be on time next time. I swear." I said.

" My cousin is here,she's about to leave right now."

" Alright,cool,'cause I need to talk to you about a girl I met."

" Romance,huh,what's her name?" she asked. As I was about to answer,Aquilla walked in from the balcony of the room. I shut my mouth. This was a small world indeed. It was Aquilla in the flesh,I hnever recalled to call,she didn't seem agitated about it.

" Her name's Aquilla..." I said the name anyway. She'd walk in and Eva would piece out the real revelation,that Aquilla and I knew each other and met before.

" You guys know each other I see. Well then firm handshakes are played out." revelead Eva. I never recalled to call Aquilla,is she appalled by me for being across the very same room as her. Something was written in the windows of her soul. I stared and remained placed at her,worrying if it was all beautiful chaos waiting to erupt. Aquilla walked right up to me and embraced me,hoping I was really there,to some degree,she was worried for me. Eva was clueless by the amount of intimacy her cousin shared with me. She'd let go then,spontaneously,pull me to the balcony to speak in private.

" Forget calling,you are here now and I missed you somhow." she revealed at the confinement. I only saw my flaw and not the flattery she gave me.

" And the therapy?" I asked her.

" What about it?"

" It doesn't bother you?"

" Xavier - I attend therapy too." she said this and held my hand with a smile and a tear rolling down her right cheek. She was happy with finding a kindred spirit. We were more than a pair of "sick kids".

" We are young,we aren't meant to have it figured out. That's why there are the adventures and the lifestyle that makes every fear real but we manage." she said.

" Aquilla,I,er..." I said,got tongue-tied and kept quiet. She kept me quiet and lifted my chin to the level of her eyes.

" It's okay...I'll see you after your session,Xavier,I'll be at Nebula Coffee Shop."

" Awesome,I'll call as soon as I am done."

" Sweet,see you then..." she bid farewell. Aquilla walked through the drapes and left her cousin's office. Before I could even commence the organized therapy session with Eva,I stayed outside at the balcony to reflect on what happened. I'd unzip my bag and hold the book I grew an obsession to. The cover changed,all it had was a rectangle on it that was portrait. I was trying to figure why the sudden change,my guess was the literature world needed more gimmicks to impress readers and I was vaguely impressed. It was probably smoke and mirrors at the flick of a button.

" Great attempt to spook me. Try better." I said towards it. I stared it down,nothing would happen. I sighed,in disappointment. There was a moment where I predicted that the book might have made me flinch in fear,began learning to manage my expectations with literature.

" Xavier,we can begin the sessions." called in Eva. I stashed back the book and tossed myself back into the room. Pacing around,trying to phrase how I ask about Aquilla's well-being. With a smile,Eva spoke about something...

" She's fine,Xavier and I can see it in your eyes that you are falling for her." said an optimistic Eva. I halted.

" Whoa,wait,what?" I muttered.

" No point denying it..."

" Well,I,er...okay,I get it. I'm her age and I slightly smile a lot around her but that's all there is."

" Oh,okay,says the young Green whom can't say her name without smiling."

" I got a gag reflex with I say it,that's all there is..."

" Oh,what bull..." she concluded and I downright laughed.

" You seem lighter now,that's good. So talk to me..." she initiated.

" Well,I've been reading this book,it's very cool,very,very cool."

" Is it about being positive."

" Well,no,not really. It's all quite complex to explain."

" Alright,alright but let's solve that and I know we can. How? Well,I read a complex too once."

" Cool,cool,what was it about?"

" It was about a historic figure."

" A biography?"

" Yes,a biography on the figure."

" Let me guess. Ghandi? Bonaparte? Stalin?"

" No. His name is Rafin. Which translates to highly praised." she said. I heard a rattle in my spine.

" Rafin..." I repeated.

" Yes. I read that book years ago and it has chills."

" He sounds,very - very,I don't know..."

" Well,there are so many accounts on him."

" Popular,the word was popular and I swear he might have been a jock."

" Well,he was feared more than Adolf. Strongly feared. He was not just anyone."

" He was? Perhaps...feared and respected?"

" Well,he didn't give a damn about his opponent at war,he conquered. He drove out a dynasty."

" Is he dated somewhere in history?"

" No. Not in exact timeline even."

" So how would he have these accounts?"

" The man committed genocide,Xavier. He killed millions."

" Millions? Wow...power corrupts."

" Power and obeying whom gave you power seem to have made that happen."

" So there were sacrifices?"

" Yep..."

" What a cruel world that was."

" Yes,it politely was. I need to talk to you about my cousin."

" Again?"

" Don't push her,don't pull her. Don't."

" I don't follow..."

" Xavier,you wish for something that is above platonic."

" Yes,I don't wanna end up alone."

" Let's first work on fixing you."

" For her sake?"

" No,not entirely."

" Not entirely?" I questioned. Eva might have hinged me. I fell off course with healing and planted affections for Aquilla as a remedy. It all ran as strange. Strange yet beautiful.

" Xavier - this will all end badly if it kicks in right away,like every other story tell."

" This is different."

" How is it different?" she questioned and that shut my reasoning completely. I kept quiet,kept to myself. Sat down,drank the glass of water that was beside me. I apologized and would apologize again then Eva led eyes to my heredity,well,the essence of heredity and so on.

" You want a daughter,right?"

" Yeah,a daughter..."

" Why?"

" Why not? I need a daughter whom I can show that the world is not a cruel,cruel world at all."

" But you can only do so much."

" Yeah,I know,I'm not magic,I can't make all of the pain in this world disappear but can I try to? Base my legacy on just a try? Hell yeah..." I calmly answered. Eva gratefully noted. She saw how I negated the criticism and stay true to whom I am.

" Now I need to hear that." she said.

" I'm sorry for dragging her around I guess. The past few days have been foggy."

" Too much going on?"

" Well,yeah plus I don't remember much about what happened. I know there's more to the days I spent though."

" Well,it's perhaps a biologically positive feedback,Xavier."

" I'm unaware of so much lately. Like,who died recently?"

" No one.

" Yeah but if anyone did,the whole of Knights Run would know. This town is that small."

" So you feel caged in this town?"

" Nope,I feel limited rather. It never amounts into anything great."

" And is that how you see yourself as well?"

" Well,yes. It's not about confident,rather - about honesty towards myself."

" Don't fret." she openly said.

" Why?" I asked.

" Well,I sense something within you."

" Doubt?"

" No,it's betterment."

" I'm humble,so thank you..."

" In the near future,Xavier - everyone will thank you."

" I'll be like,I don't know...the new Rafin?"

" No,no - you'll be a lot heroic." she complimented. My intentions to the world were grateful enough for Eva to praise me,I can't reject what was said and yet what was said had weighed a lot of responsibility,rather not say status but morality levels. I rested down and felt more open,less in pain and gardened healthier thoughts of changing my surroundings. The remainder of the session felt as if it was more about reaching out to Eva than complaining or tinkering. Was it all a revelation? I vouched that. I might as well usher possibilities that the very Aquilla and I were paired up. Then the actuality clicked,perhaps this was all because of the book,it might have have had a quantum technique in regarding the law of attraction. The book vibed off a magical trail within my eyes and experiences. I rarely remembered the rest of the therapy session I would share with Eva even. Was I dying? Perhaps addicted to something that surpassed purpose and grief. I just could not fabricate reasoning for the unintentional ignorance. All I knew was that - somehow,I felt immortal to this Earth. About as soon as the session ended,I ran off to Aquilla's location,I was obviously awaiting the talk she asked her and I would have and all I needed to note how it was her initiation into holding it,never mine. I could only wonder what she wanted to say to me,hoping she is falling for me. I hoped if she was,it'd be true love...

Nebula Coffee Shop
1717 hours

I walked into the coffee shop which was one of Knights Run's priced places. It was an establishment that flooded many to visit and so much synergy from how the natives lived. I was just charting that I needed to just find Aquilla first then perhaps, think of what to say to her, I never wanted to script how to speak to her, how to ease up into her mind, it was all meant to be from the heart as our grandparents would say. With sweaty palms and a jaded fear for not arriving at Morshower's humble establishment which grew my literature - I was standing at the coffee shop. Aquilla called out, I heard it then I saw her hand as she waved at me. I chuckled and walked to her and sat on the seat opposite to her. I was perhaps shaky in my speech. Aquilla seemed normal, would radiate a smile here and there and I would initiate conversation.

"I'm, uh... I glad I called, Aquilla. Despite how crazy all of these days have been." I started.

"I'm glad you made time for this meeting of ours too." she commented. Before I would say or even think of saying anything, she struck another look, a little different and less hostile as I hope. She winced and I knew from that moment - I need not have to worry about too much.

"I, uh, I'm not good at romance." I started. Aquilla started blushing, flaunting her smile.

"Heck, I am not even a great poet. Anymore, or not at all, same fault but I mean, I can try... to cook."

"Yeah, uh huh but you are not a water burner, right?"

"Uh, not that I recall." I goofed and she laughed. Then arrived a moment of nurture.

"But I know one thing, the most romantic thing I can do is be myself." I spoke to her. Aquilla has been distant lately for some reason, I only knew her for days, days that I barely remembered. I would think that she needed to hear that, I was false, she needed a friend at that time since she was unstable on her own but the public would not actually see it. She didn't show that she was crying herself to sleep. About a few seconds I said this, she spent time thinking of a well-suited reply, a reply that could easily enlighten me about why she needed to see me.

"Xavier, I'm flattered. I really am..."

"But you seem me as a friend."

"No, no, not all. It's not that at all."

"Okay, then... what is it?"

"Well, I need to show you what I am dealing with."

"Show me? Aquilla, I don't know."

"Relax, it will be okay. I mean, okay. Let me just freshen up first."

"Okay, freshen up then -"

"Actually, what the heck, we live in the 21st Century, right?"

"The worst century right now that needs help." I commented and there was an image sent to my device, from Aquilla herself. I was a little dazed. Before I even opened it, I had to ask something.

"Um, Aquilla, why didn't you just show me the image with your own phone?" I asked.

"You need to have to keep seeing what I need to show you, Xavier. Keep it even." she justified. I was finally on the actual point of thinking that Aquilla held so much emphasis of the reasons why she couldn't see me as a worthy suitor. I opened the image, my jaw dropped. I felt the pheromones ignite. The image was of Aquilla's torso. At first, I felt as if she was using sensuality which was petty in my eyes then I saw her waist - it had symbols on it. They were enchanting.

"I can't believe my eyes..." I said.

"I had to take the image in the morning so that you can see that it's not edited and how these markings are there for real." she explained why that time of day was so essential. I zoomed right to them. They weren't familiar to me. They seemed very, very intricate and mathematically placed.

"So, what's the deal with them? Did you get them and your folks shouldn't find out?" I asked, again. For a person whom held a picture from the very own Aquilla Rhodes herself, I might have been too inquisitive.

"Um, they already know. I was born with these markings." she confessed.

"Whoa, wait, do they affect your health somehow?"

"No, no but they illuminate and converge."

"And that's normal?"

"No, no - the pain is unbearable, well, was but I am fine now. We should leave."

"Wait, leave the Coffee Shop? And go where?"

"My house. We can grab our orders and take a cab there. We only need an hour in time."

"Okay, let's go." I nervously said to her. From there on, I zoned out, speculated so much, did she know about "Property Of Carter" and wanted to seduce me to get it? Seems very far-fetched for a theory, it wouldn't add up - not even once nor as a second thought. I recalled something that conjured responsibility to my cerebro. I had to attend to the Morshower library. I had to rush there.

" Um,Aquilla..." I called out while she stood up.

" Yeah?" she answered. I hesitated at first.

" Xavier?" she called out again.

" I need to first go to the library."

" Um,no problem,we can both go there and all."

" The cab fair is priced."

" Yeah,clearly you haven't seen my house." she pointed out. Now,I felt compelled to know more about Aquilla. Her very presence made the Universe gain anxiety of it's own deities. Then as my thoughts were collecting the possibilities of whom the daughter of Rhodes really is,"Property Of Carter" began a soft shrill that wasn't heard in that moment.

Morshower Public Library
1750 hours

The driver would drive right into the parking of the library. Seated at the back,I packed the books I was bestowed last week and I had jitters about what was to happen. Aquilla played a factor as well. I was rushing and not minding how it seemed that way.

" Okay,now. I'm just going to see Morshower for like 10 minutes and that includes the life lesson he'll lecture me on." I told her.

" Well,look,relax,okay?" she said,I glimpsed and kept quiet.

" Yeah,you are right,you are totally right." I applauded.

" Let's go then..." she would say.

" Alright,let's leave. Let's go to see him." I said and we exited. The cab driver was Yusuf and he knew me so I had to do was let him know. I knew enough about him even regarding that he is from a foreign land and he indeed was an entrepreneur. Whilst I spoke to Yusuf,Lucias' collective began searching for the book - at Morshower Library.

" Milo,I swear that -" spoke Umi. As she was about to finish saying her complaint,Milo would speak his mind.

" This is the world's most simplest plan." interrupted Milo.

" No,it's all bullshit!" cursed an irritated Umi.

" You wanna know what's bullshit? Literally walking to the library and asking." said Dominic. Lucias was roaming around the shelves,trying to use sorcery to find. The amount of books could fill acres and acres of field. Patiently,he was going shelf for shelf,not leaving a stone unturned on this search while the others blended,with the exception of Milo and Umi whom were sleuths. Under the surge of this hunt,frustration was brewing and so was the actual traits of hoarding when Milo kept every detail of the investigation. The collective left the drapery and focused on what young adults of the 21st Century wore but they had some element of concealing their faces about the majority of the time they dedicated to spend at Knights Run. Lucias was narrowing down the books still,it'd take him days to do so while Umi stayed with Milo.

" Watch and learn." commanded Milo to Umi.

" Oh,sure. You are practically being honest to the staff,I mean,Hell,I would do the same thing." she replied.

" That's gotta be sarcasm." speculated Milo.

" Well,look,what you said to Hannah was mean."

" Yeah but I didn't write it on a bathroom window or something."

" That's not the point here."

" Then what is? I said a joke,that's all." defended Milo whom felt that the days he was bruised surfaced,causing his rash comments that all were not rational.

" Okay,I believe you." mentioned Umi then there was a staff member helming the front desk - it was Mrs Morshower herself whom was aiding Milo and Umi.

" Good afternoon." greeted the timid Mrs Morshower.

" Er,hi. I am looking for something in the library." said Milo.

" Okay,is it a lost object or-" asked Mrs Morshower for clarification.

" It's a book actually." calmly answered Milo.

" Alright,the title please."

" Property Of Carter." said Milo. Mrs Morshower ran through the systems to find it. Mrs Morshower's first name was Elaine,I addressed her as "Aunt Elaine" however because she would always see me as her own growing nephew despite the ethnicity.

" Yes,we are in possession of a book in that title." she replied.

" It can't be this easy." warned Umi. Milo shushes her and would feel adrenalin rushing his entire body.
" Alright,alright,it's here." said Milo in a hyper tone,he chuckled countless times while he would retrieve his library card which was forged using wizardry. He presented it to her.

" Can I please take it out?" he kindly asked Mrs Morshower.

" Oh,it's checked out right now." she pointed out. Milo's jaw dropped. Umi sighed.

" Well,back to the routine of actually being forced to decipher people." complained Umi.

" Wait...I got it." said Milo whom used his ingenuity. Loudly laughing,Aquilla and I walked into the library. Mrs Morshower's heart sank and she was overjoyed when she saw us be so entwined within each other's attention. Milo groans and turned to us.

" What the Hell? They are in love! We get it." he complained about how distracted Mrs Morshower became after just seeing Aquilla and I. I never heard Milo's complaint,to be frank,I wasn't attentive for the past few days and never bothered to figure out even why. Was it behavioural ignorance or just psychological fixations of believing in these illusions? Maybe both. I don't recall tying my shoes this morning but I can reference any line from the first 25 pages of "Property Of Carter". The book held some sort of vise to my attention but it seemed I surrendered my attention willingly to the very Aquilla Rhodes. So her and I strutted and Milo turned back to the desk.

" Okay,um,can I please get the name of the person who checked it out?" kindly asked Milo whom was losing his composure exponentially.

" Milo,cool it." said Dominic using a neural connection. There was a simple annalysis of the strategy. Milo,Umi and Lucias were in the library while Dominic,Lance and Hannah weren't. They were all had a neural network that allowed them to be,in the right state,in sync and not compromised. Dominic and company were concealed but were very near the library,they were on the watch for any law enforcement. Despite how concrete and revolutionary their plan was,nothing is never in fact just simple. Lucias and the collective had an enemy - Cunningham and he pieced together some evidence by reviewing the footage he was privildged with for 3 days. So,somewhere in the library,he was nested to finally apprehend the very Lucias Crimson himself.

" I'm sorry but that's against our policy to disclose such information." vividly said Mrs Morshower. I waltzed to Morshower's office with Aquilla and was phased away from what was happening at the front desk. Morshower sat on his chair,looked very concerned and had a worrying look.

" Hello Mr Morshower." I greeted without jitters,I only held the expection of something negative meant to happen. Morshower directly looked at Aquilla.

" I see you made a new friend as planned." he commented. Aquilla and I exchanged a look,we had to converse about what Morshower said because it might have been said in the mistaken trajectory.

" What's going on?" I bravely asked.

" Xavier,you are like a son to me. I respect that. I respect you and eo forth. But your real father is concerned that you lost your balance in the past few days. Now that worries me." he expressed. I sharply exhaled. Aquilla clinched my hand and I knew she wanted to whisper confident words.

" Alright,I'll pay for the overdue books as soon as possible,they aren't even tarnished at all." I promised.

" Xavier,it's not that - I have to suspend your library membership indefinitely." he announced.

" What? Why?" I asked weakly. Aquilla clinched my hand harder.

" Mr Morshower,did Xavier do anything wrong here?" asked Aquilla. Mr Morshower seems more as if there was an authority conducting this action.

" Nope. It's just that this action is out of my hands and it was based on a person's recommendation and it was revised then took into place. I'm sorry." he said formally but through his voice,it had sadness in it. My own thoughts became scattered and I did not say a word.

" I'll get Otto to draw up the documents." Morshower notified and left his office. In there,was myself,all devastated and a supportive and nurturing Aquilla. I sat down and wanted to curl up,finally,she saw me at my weakest only in the second rendezvous. It was I was apperaing that I would be always in a war. I couldn't drift away from her warmth,I still wanted to vent to her,this all seemed rigged,unnecessarily even. Yet,there was silence and it's now I see it was best to keep quiet in that moment,everything fell itno place for goodwill in my sake. It only needed that very moment to outgrow from only being seen as just a drop-out who was passing time and wasn't moving mountains,getting established. Now there was the moment of silence and just keeping quiet. Out of the room,Milo regained his composure surronding how he can't access the system and know who currently held "Property Of Carter". However,he resorted to using wizardry as alwaays and upon an inanimate object but it'll be too wasteful over the extraction of a name. My name,without any of their acknowledging. So it was an impaasse for the collective. All of time stood still. Everything would have turned out normal if we all left the library right away but all of what would happened was all because of Otto.

" I need coffee right now..." asked Morshower when he arrived to the file department of the library. Present was Martha and Otto whom were having conversations about the Knights Run Fest that was months away. Otto felt disappointed.

" Mr Morshower,I'll be honest. This is messed up..." complained Otto. Morshower exhaled heavily.

" There's nothing I can do. This was an order. It will help him in a few years as the person suggested." said Morshower.

" He's like a son to you though..." objected Otto.

" Yes,which is why I agreed to the ban. Look,I need to go out with my wife,she needs to zone out since the news. Otto,you are in charge." ordered Morshower. Otto was stunned.

" I am in charge?" he asked for confirmation.

" Otto is in charge?" asked a concerned Martha. Morshower just nodded.

" Is this all a joke?" asked Otto out of concern,showing self-doubt. It was a fair reason why,Otto was a cannon in nature,it all seemed volatile.

" Look,Otto,I expect you to wrap up with Xavier and the rest of the other people here,lock up and leave. That's all." explained Morshower.

" Seems easy enough..." agreed Otto. Morshower tossed over the keys to young Otto.

" It's just one afternoon in charge,what's the worst that could happen?" said Morshower. Martha exhaled in doubt.

" Yes,I mean,Otto cannot mess this up..." said a hopeful Martha. Now,this was all simple living but silently - it all was chess in a war amongst mortals. Meanwhile,Milo restrained himself from the front desk and went to an aisle in the establishmen. His mind suggested something.

" There is another wizard in the library." he said to himself. Somehow,Milo can sense supernatural energy,analyze it and quantify its origin,that was just what he learned so far.

" I need to track the person." he said this preempted idea. Milo conjured a spell,the seal was brightly shown over his right hand. The spell had a name I would only know in the future. Milo's spell was a life force x-ray,he whisked it around,trying to have any lead of some sort. This wasn't an obsession,more of an aspiration for Milo to find a wizard whom he could team up with for ventures apart from what Lucias envisions for the collective.

" This is crap,I need to light it up." complained Milo whom channeled more energy into his palm. Then appeared a chuckling Cunningham,concealing his firearm. He called him out.

" Now that's cool,which phone is that,guy?" asked Cunningham in a tone that did not derived suspicion nor being baffled immensely. Milo turned around slowly.

" Phone? Oh,yeah,um,it's a prototype from this underrated Scottish phone company." lied Milo.

" Yeah,I have got to get one as soon as possible." replied Cunningham.

" Yeah,as long as your whole pay cheque doesn't bounce." joked Milo.

Chapter 3 - The Hunt For Contentment

Cunningham kept quiet for a few seconds then loudly laughed. For several seconds, it was authentic while Milo held back his laughter. Milo was hostile.

"Now that's funny, you have got to be a comic, someday. So tell me, you are from out of town?" asked Cunningham. This was all an interrogation.

"Yeah, I was born in Frankfurt, migrated here when I was young," replied Milo, which was all true.

"Cool, cool. Travel much?" asked a seething Cunningham.

"Yeah, I do. I have been to South Africa, Indonesia, South Korea - " named Milo.

"- Japan." added Cunningham.

"What?" asked Milo whom was taken out the conversations of travel.

"Milo Parker, isn't it?" questioned Cunningham.

"How the Hell do you know my name?"

"Well, one of your friends told me. He told me all I need to know." revealed Cunningham.

"Shit." cursed Milo. Now, this could evolve into a fight, Milo began conjuring an offensive spell on his left hand that wasn't paid attention to by a very brass Cunningham. The firearm was shown and Milo was aimed at.

"Now, I'm going to ask one question - where you in Okinawa a few weeks ago?" questioned Cunningham.

"We both know the answer to the question and we both know that you are not going to kill me here." spoke Milo. Cunningham placed his gun out of the safety mode.

"Who are you working for? Jericho?" asked Milo.

"I am working for my city, young man and I won't let you just waltz out of it." pledged Cunningham.

"I can sink your city." threatened Milo. Cunningham chuckled.

"I don't doubt that for a second. Which is why I need to kill you." confessed Cunningham. The gun went off.

Everybody heard it. Milo raised his left arm and a ray of light touched the surface of the bullet then it dispersed into thin air.

"I just sent the bullet with my name on it to Oblivion. Be careful about what you do next." warned Milo.

Cunningham chuckled. He had a proposition.

"No guns, no magic." proposed Cunningham. He unloaded his gun and placed it away.

"It's called Wizardry, not magic." corrected Milo.

"Alright. No guns, no wizardry." rephrased Cunningham.

"I know this is already too early to say this but I'm so sorry for the destruction." apologized Milo.

"What can I say? Stuff happens." condoned Cunningham. The Seals shown on both Milo's hands dispersed and now the fight can commence.

"Don't die." said Milo. Cunningham sharply exhaled and both of them sprinted towards each other, it was a short distance, paces in fact. Cunningham attempted a clothesline but Milo maneuvered using a crystal baseball slide, dodging it. Milo stood up and took jabs at Cunningham, about 3 to his abdomen. Cunningham struck his nose then planted a mean jab to his left jaw that sent him stumbling to the floor. This was not a mere fight anymore.

"Get up, pal..." taunted Cunningham. Milo rubbed his jaw briefly and rose. He clinched his right fist and without warning, punched Cunningham's core. Cunningham took the punishment but the young Milo would scale library shelves, leap over Cunningham and then harshly deliver a German suplex. Milo went over the edge, he had to use the very shelves to prop himself to his feet. When he could stand, Cunningham had mere moments of solidity already.

"What the Hell? How are you up?" complained Milo.

"I'm not just a cop and this fight is over." proclaimed Cunningham. Both were panting already, tiring every second.

Milo had an idea now, he knew what could end him. Ironically, so did Cunningham. Both took a few paces away from each other and sprinted with their shoulders first. They collided. Took serious knocks. Cunningham crashed into the shelf of books while Milo's distance was a lot less. Cunningham threw the towel it seems.

"This kid has been juicing. I swear to God." weakly said Cunningham whose body refused to stand up to its feet momentarily. He heard Milo limping away.

"Yeah, you run, alright..." he said then chuckled. Finally, Cunningham delivered a message and he knew that his tip-off's plan was going as planned. A plan that needed my aid as well, with or without my consent. The library's vast yet occupied space diminished the sounds of hearing a fight, which meant I was still tardy at Morshower's office, with Aquilla, awaiting for the documents that will officiate my membership suspension indefinitely.

"I mean, who could do such a thing to me though?" I asked Aquilla in a very shyly tone.

"No. Don't. You'll be fine." she would say in comfort.

"Will I? Really? This is one more coping mechanism gone. This place helped me keep sane..." I said.

"Now you have me to help." she proposed.

" Thanks but I am not looking for a friend." I rejected. Smiling,Aquilla said a few words that brightened my dark sky moments.

" I didn't say I'm your friend. I'm saying that you are mine and I'm yours." she proclaimed. I turned to her and showed a serious wince. This all meant that Aquilla has sought to see me as her better half,well,she'd be the better half since I held too much issues at the time but we'd be together and a relationship could commence from that day onwards. I placed my left arm over her shoulder and squeezed her out of compassion. This would have led to a kiss - then Otto abruptly arrived into the office while looking over papers.

" Okay,sorry I'm late,Xavier and Aquilla. I had to take care of an incident that happened on one of the aisles in the library." apologized Otto.

" Whoa,whoa,are you okay?" I asked out of concern.

" Yeah,you look scrawny,too scrawny for such." commented Aquilla,which was purely out of concern.

" Xavier,yes,I'm okay. It was just something peculiar. And Aquilla,I'm scrawny? Thanks,I can be a runway model now." answered Otto.

" Okay,what is this peculiar incident that happened?" I asked.

" Gang violence." replied Otto.

" Gang violence? It's really here in Knights Run?" I said,stunned by what was said. Otto laughed hysterically.

" Where the Hell have you been for the past few days? That's just a joke. It was just a wild otter knocking books in the shelf." explained Otto. I exhaled. I knew my small town was never under attack,there was harmony within it. Everyone greeted everyone. It was in the rights to call itself "Civil and progressing. I had just one more question,which Aquilla ended up asking.

" Okay,did you catch the otter?" asked Aquilla.

" Uh,nope. It took a hostage so we are negotiating ransom. Now enough on that. I got your papers ready,Xavier." said a keen Otto.

" Well,I am not pleased to see them." I honestly spoke.

" Just on the record here,we had our hands tied here. We are not leasing you,we will welcome you again." he said.

" Don't be so sure I'll scrape the welcome mat on the front door again,Otto. We all know this place is where my mind grows." I said.

"Yes,I do,personally,I do. I went through the same exact thing 20 years ago when I was suspended." said Otto.

" From this very establishment? That you now work for?" asked Aquilla.

" Nope,from university. Major Frat House party but I managed to keep focused that entire month." replied Otto.

" Yeah,but,I...I might be gone for good. Might as well burn my card." I said.

" Actually,don't..." said Otto.

" What? Why?" I asked.

" I'm letting you keep the books you have out 'til you are done reading them. Which is also,indefinite." said Otto.

" Okay,what does Morshower make of this?" I asked.

" Yeah,this clashes with a lot of laws." said Aquilla.

" Which ones? Exactly. Look,books go missing all the time,then again,I'd rather make it seem that they are here but they are with you." said Otto.

" So you will check them in but I get home with them?" I asked.

" Exactly. The Morshowers left already plus you need to read,I'll deal with them for months on end if I have to but I won't let a young black man be denied knowledge over silly politics." proclaimed Otto. I had to think things through. This could surface trouble. For Aquilla,whom was witnessing it and did not stand against it. Then there was Otto whom voluntarily wanted to startt and adminstration fallout. I thought,what did I wanted in my life at that moment? Was it knowledge or wisdom? Was it all about the pursuit of happiness or the hunt for contentment because for me,I had to make a killing out of the things you are great at to have contentment. Or was it simply just a question of what I had to see with my own eyes? Yes. I had tojust to know that everything isn't for everyone. Literature was for me. Whether I had to be amongst the corrupt and the elusive,I had to read. Read. Grow up. Decipher success. Be Humble. I had to decipher the codes to a life where my heirs have it easier,I had to read. So to the Black community and the oppressed,I'd say read and turn pages,never heads at first.

" Alright,I'll finish off the books." I agreed.

" Now that's what I am talking about." applauded Otto.

" Yeah but only on one condition. If they catch on,I'll take the blame,I don't wanna see you on the already long unemployment line." I conditioned.

" Got it,we'll blame you. I'm done with that." agreed Otto.

" Me too,if it all falls apart. I won't let you be in trouble alone." said Aquilla. She stood by me.

" Okay,we have got it sorted. I'll blame you two for everything." rephrased Otto. We shook on it and now I would be kicked out of the library system. After about three minutes of working on Morshower's computer,he was done.

" Alright,I'm done. The system says you are in your own Rtobben Island and the books are here." he stated.

" It's funny,it takes three weeks to be welcomed into Morshower's Library but it only takes resentment and three minutes to get kicked out." I noticed. Aquilla only kept quiet,holding my hand the whole time.

" The irony is what it is but not what it could be. Perhaps a lesson to be learned? Either way,you'll be back here soon enough." condoned Otto.

" Do you think I'm designed to fail? To be doomed? To always be limited?" I asked. Otto stretched his arm and had something wise to say.

" The moment you said that,I heard the Heavens say "Hell no!". You are Xavier Green,this whole town will worship you before you are 25. Don't let this darkness be your definition rather your revelations. Things might go bump in the night but who knows that whatever you stomp your foot with might be the key to everything. Remember that." noted a wise Otto. The quote felt improvised,from the top of his head and perhaps inspired from an author but no,it was his own introspection. I should a glimpse of a wince and nodded to him. Otto stretched out his fist,I bumped it with mine. Aquilla had goosebumps over this union.

" Okay,now. You both gotta go now. Got a lot to do." said Otto. I laughed.

" I know you have things to do with Aquilla too." he added. I kept quiet and Aquilla laughed about my silence. I wore a serious face.

" We are taking it slow." I notified.

" Have you met the parents yet?" he asked.

" Yep..." said Aquilla.

" Uh huh." I agreed with her. Otto could say so much but chose fewer words. Words that even Morshower would say. It was all uncalled for.

" Yeah,you have a lot to do. Lots to do. Get in trouble,the works." he analyzed.

" Okay,we'll go now." I announced.

" Thank you,Otto." humbly said Aquilla.

" Don't mention it,really don't mention it." said Otto. I could finally finish reading "Property Of Carter". Aquilla and I stepped out of the office with a cheerful banter. Otto remained to keep the system intact. I was strutting with her on the way to the front door,people sensed the energy between us already. Was it all ideal or was it crucial? I had a subconscious that contemplated on that question time and time again. My foggy memory was seeing the day of light each minute passing by,I recalled the call that I made the night after I met her,it was all hysterical. I kept overhearing a timid conversation her parents had over which television channel to watch whilst she was penning a written piece that she'd only share with me when it was needed. The memories crawled back to my brain that was flooded with chapters from "Property Of Carter". Finally,we stepped out of the library. That could have been the last time I was ever there. As expected,Yusuf,our cab driver was patiently waiting for us.

" I swear that Yusuf has been sleeping this whole time." I joked. Aquilla giggled briefly.

" Bet you money that he isn't sleeping but instead he's busy with a crossword." she said.

" Alright,deal." I agreed. Before we can take another step,Cunningham appeared at our sight. He was panting and seemed unorganized.

" Whoa!" I said slowly,I was startled despite the very impression I had.

" Are you okay?" questioned Aquilla.

" You look like my drunk Uncle Atticus right now." I commented. Cunningham had a fake laugh and did not welcome humor.

" I was in a fight." he said.

" You were in a fight?" I asked out of confusion.

" Yeah,I'm a cop,I have to." he said.

" And you have to shoot innocent people too,right?" asked a bitter Aquilla.

" Sweetheart,I'm different,okay? In fact,I'm still in a fight right now." clarified a tiring Cunningham.

" Okay,so you decided to sprint down to the library and read up real fighting while the opponent was catching his breath?" I asked.

" Yeah,yeah,something like that." said Cunningham whom was having a difficulty regaining mental clarity again.

" Yeah,I'll need a gun now." I added. Milo was present,just about a few yards parallel to the main entrance,he just rippled reality to not be seen. This was all because of a spell that he was taught,he conjured a second spell,on his left arm. It was the very spell that sent the fired bullet to a realm he claimed was Oblivion. Milo wanted send to Cunningham to Oblivion. With good reasoning. Milo decided to ignore the rules,he agreed but this was all based on. His observation - Cunningham can and perhaps will kill him.

" I got to kill him. I got to kill him. Good guy but I got to kill him." said a stuttering Milo to himself. The remaining members had a predicament - there was a squadron of police whom were trying to trace each and everyone of them. The very same person whom divulged the very lucrative information to Cunningham was orchestrated the entire hunt for the followers of dark magic. Correction,as Milo would always say - wizardry. The followers of Wizardry. Milo was being brass,why would he cast him away now? I just proved that having allegiance with the necessary people can still help an exiled still be roaming around somehow however I spoke of only fooling administration and this was ancient and forgotten arts. Milo exhaled and aimed at him,then he was disturbed.

" We got to go. Cops are amongst us." warned Dominic whom was dashing down the stairs.

" Yeah,reminder. I am not within reality. I'm good." replied Milo. The neural network was flooding with cries of retreating.

" We aren't. Clearly Wes Parker is the first person to find..." speculated Hannah.

" No,no. That's impossible. Parker's off the radar. It's like he doesn't exist. Someone else is behind all of this." replied Milo.

" Milo,this is a time to run,not speculate!" outburst Umi whom was frantic. She was been ran to by the very squadron.

" Okay,okay,I just got to send Cunningham packing and we'll just show this town what power really is." notified Milo. The Seal was powered. Now,he had to sought between how Cunningham's physical self would accept the shift to Oblivion or not. The comprehension lacked,Cunningham would die and if he would humbly accept it,his entire organs would not fret. Milo usually explained the concept of Oblivion to the person he'd send using very few words and he'd transport them to the realm.

" This is Lucias,I have a new lead,we need to go to the Kalahari." notified the leader Lucias.

" Son of a...can't you see I'm trying to kill someone here?" complained Milo whose concentration was thrown away. Milo aimed at Cunningham. I don't remember what Cunningham,Aquilla and I were talking about,I was dazed now. Very dazed,extremely dazed. As Milo was about to strike,Yusuf pressed the horn that was very loud and had a rusty echo. Milo,caught off guard,cursed.

" Oh,Yusuf's got to go now." said Aquilla.

" Yeah,he has been patient,might as well leave." I commented.

" Alright but think about what I said." reminded Cunningham.

" Huh? Yeah,yeah. I will." I said ignorantly.

" Wait - so you will consider being a cop?" asked a baffled Aquilla.

" What now?" I asked,I now was clueless. Cunningham sighed.

" Teenagers..." chattered Cunningham. I apologized,twice,not in Swahili but it was very modest either way. Cunningham walked past us,into the library. Milo's identification Seal sparked itself. It was bizzare.

" What the? No way..." said an astonished Milo. He aimed at the stairs where Aquilla and I briefly stayed over. He had a reading,according to the Seal - I was a wizard. An Elemental.

" Milo,do you copy? This is Umi,do you copy?" called out Umi. He was not moving ever since grasped the reading. Milo recalled drowning in a passing memory,Umi's voice faded. Within nothing longer than a second,he was brought back to reality.

" Milo,do you copy?" asked Umi in a recurring tone,she never became impatient,rose panic though.

" Huh? Yeah,I hear you." answered Milo.

" I'll go ghost at Town Hall,you'll get me there." she notified.

" Wait,you are going astray from the team?" asked Milo.

" I'm not leaving without you. Even if it means staying around,I'll stay around." said Umi.

" Well,okay. Accept to dodge bullets and so forth." warned Milo.

" I'd have been disappointed if those weren't there." goofed Umi. Milo scoffed and dispersed both seals except for his reality warping Seal that was on the very ground he stood by. Aquilla and I scurried to the cab and I allowed her to sit in first.

" Take us to this address please." kindly asked Aquilla whom handed Yusuf a piece of paper which he read a lot and was impressed but had vague expressions.

" Aren't you going to tell me where you live?" I asked Aquilla half-jokingly.

" Well...aren't you worried about my parents more?" she asked me.

" Nope..." I replied right away.

" Well,then I say nope. Relax,you'll see it." condoned Aquilla.

" So this is your way of keeping me awake for the drive?" I asked. The cab took motion and she placed her head on my neck,closed her eyes. Aquilla was actually going to nap. Her body started being warm,the cab left the library's parking lot.

" Well,I guess I gotta be awake." I said to myself. Yusuf played the radio and an old 90s song would be played,it was all about love and so forth. We were driven off,away to her home.

25 Columbus Road
1823 hours

We were in an elite estate,her neighborhood. Streets were named and neighbors knew neighbors. I was perceiving that Aquilla's family is,in fact,financially superior. They probably are from a long line of a clan of Rhodes. When Yusuf halted the cab,I decided not to wake Aquilla up just yet. Rather,I paid for the fare voluntarily. There we crippled notes but a humble Yusuf accepted them.

" Thank you..."I said to Yusuf whom nodded in acceptance. I propped Aquilla's head from my neck gently.

" Hey,wake up..." I whispered to her. Aquilla opened her eyes and yawned. She would just open the door and step outside,I followed. Never forgetting my backpack that was,tearing. Yusuf took off and we faced her house.

" Whoa..." I said in astonishment. Aquilla scoffed and held my hand.

" Yeah,I know. Come on,let's go inside." she said to me. Aquilla took me by my arm and walked into the yard.

" Whoa,wait,where are your parents and siblings?" I asked cautiously. Aquilla loudly laughed,roared in fact. I became dazed,confused. We were by the door,she took out her key and opened the door,we walked in.

" It's just us here. My parents are at a conference until tomorrow noon and I don't have siblings." she told me.

" Oh...noted." I said,swallowing my saliva in fear. Aquilla went to the refrigerator. I awkwardly place my bag on a chair. Stood awkwardly in the hallway. I remained quiet,very quiet,started staring at portraits that were hung on the walls. She finally walked back to me after the invitation in her humble abode. She was holding two bottles of beer.

" Here." she said as she passed me one. I was heavily enticed. My sobriety meant more.

" Is it non-alcoholic?" I openly asked. She nodded vigorously. I gained possession of it and opened it. It was the very same product. I took the first few sips,so did she.

" I bet you wanna see this entire house,right?" she asked.

" Yeah,can I get a tour?" I asked,stupidly,hesitantly. What was this emotional mist that I was lost in? It could be love or the idea of love,perhaps none of the three. In that very moment,my father tried calling again,my phone wasn't on silent. The handheld was not dimmed at all. I stared at it.

" Yeah,but aren't you going to answer that?" she asked. I still had a stare down.

" I'll call back." I concluded,the handheld stopped ringing and I'd switch off my phone. The lectures of my father were halted. Again. In fact,my memory of speaking to him recently was less and less. I had the hereditary of ignorance at such a young age.

" Okay,cool..." she agreed with me.

" Yeah..." I said.

" Hey,um,if you'd like,there are some few bags of cocaine we can have tonight?" she offered. I froze.

" Oh,I,er,um..." I stuttered. Aquilla scoffed.

" Relax,I was kidding..." she confessed and hit her fist to my gut. She began to walk,I followed with.

" Yeah,I just never know what's a joke and what isn't anymore." I said.

" Well,all of this, isn't a joke." she said. The tour began. The tour of the Rhodes' Knights Run estate. The home was vast,it held so many rooms,so many confinements within confinements. By the time we were in the two for ten minutes,she began just pointing what I could see without interacting with. Non-alcoholic or not,we were still clumsy,very clumsy. It kept spilling on the floor and so forth. I blamed my jitters along with how "Property Of Carter" made me sleepless but I needed sleep. She always had a prepared speech somehow for every part of a specific area. What did I ever say to her in the very forgotten days? Have I told her she's beautiful already or did I even call her? I tried remembering,recalling and had no feedback. It were as if someone else was in charge of my attention a few days back. I began glimpsing at a poetic moment she had. It was under the stars,we were alone and she kept asking if I were okay,my answers varied. A lot,were all synonyms for being fine. Yet,I was slowly progressive. Aquilla sent me to the swimming pool,it was massive,completely maintained. I was impressed completely. I walked to the edge while she stood in one place. I looked into it,wondered what this placement meant and again,there were stars above us.

" Wow...it is amazing." I confidently complimented.

" Yeah,thank you." she said in practice. I was more in present with the moment unlike before since I have been reading the book. Aquilla,walked up to me and the reflection of the pool framed the moment. She stared me down,deeply. I knew intimacy could arise. I thought about how a kiss is so easy to act on those days. Was it a kiss pending or was there more to that very moment? I felt like brewing a casual conversation again.

" So,how deep is this pool?" I asked.

" It's to your neck level..." she said,in a flirting tone.

" Yeah,I might need to have my neck above high waters." I commented.

" Do you feel like we should keep talking or skip to it?" asked Aquilla in a settling voice.

" Let's skip to it. If it there is something to skip to." I said,I began closing in to her face. She brought hers,with only a wince. She seemed that I motivated difference amongst other guys. I stopped.

" But,to Hell with it,I know a proper way to do things right." I said.

" Right?" she asked,was I being gibberish? Nope,just the difference tainted.

" Aquilla!" shouted a male voice from the house.

" Oh,shit..." I said. We heard footsteps towards the pool area.

" It's my uncle." she said frantically. I felt my heart racing.

" Can you swim?" she asked.

" Yes,but let me be honest." I openly said. The beer bottles were disposed of,I just had to speak of an alibi of why I was there with her.

" Okay,it's probably just my uncle." she speculated. I was took a deep breath.

" Hope he is cool." I said. Now,someone took a few steps and was behind me,Aquilla loudly gasped. I heard the thuds.

" What? Is he that bad?" I asked. She pointed behind me. I turned around completely.

" Aquilla?" called out from the house. About 4 feet away from me,there stood a creature. It was the very being that was at Morshower's parking lot on the 23rd hour. I was shocked,didn't say a word. It was 7 feet tall,looked like a blue humanoid but it's attire seemed ancient. It had brawns and it seemed cunning. It wasn't hostile,it seemed at an impasse with me. It knew me,I sensed such. It exhaled. Never exchanged a single word with us. In referenced enough with it's appearance to see that it was a male being,of royalty somehow. He stood there,looking at us only. It seemed unpresidential. Aquilla was paralyzed in fear.

" Run. Aquilla,run." I said to her. She was only trembling,didn't move. My hands,both of them in fact,began conjuring due to the fear and doubt I held with was immense. I saw them illuminate. I didn't pay attention to what even happened,I thought only of protecting Aurora. He raised his right arm towards me.

" Aquilla?" the voice called out her name was called once. The very person was only a minute away from reaching the doors to the pool area. The being's right palm was facing the ground. He turned his right to the right,I violently teleported in moments. Aquilla screamed in horror. I wasn't where I was anymore. The person whom was has been calling out her name rushed into the pool.

" Aquilla?!" he cried out in panic. Then,the very being that displaced me wasn't there,it was only Aquilla standing by at the edge of the pool. She turned to him,it was his uncle Russell. She looked back,the being wasn't truly there. She fell off as confused now. She kept wondering where I was. She did not worry where I was,I was placed nearer than she thought. Uncle Russell went to her,worried.

" Are you okay,Aquilla?" asked Uncle Russell as he was at her aid.

" Yeah,I'm,I don't know..." she said,she felt suffocated.

" Are you going through a panic attack?" questioned Uncle Russell.

" No,I,er...I'm fine." said Aquilla whom collected herself. The instance was assisted by "Property Of Carter" despite it's displacement at that very moment.

" Okay,I'm taking it that it's boy problems. Look,we have a "Graduate First Then Date" Law,punishable when broken." he warned Aquilla. Russell seemed extremely brass regarding boys around his young niece,you could only imagine how he would react when he saw me with her,cosying around.

" Yes,I know of it,since I was 15 and still active now." she agreed,not defying Russell.

" Anyway,I'm here to bring you your mum's medication,you need to sign for it." he explained.

" Oh,they are from Friday Pharmaceuticals?" asked Aquilla.

" Yes,very revolutionary company. Let's get the paperwork..." he said,showing the way to the house.

" Paperwork? I thought that would be using a digital format." she commented.

" They aren't that revolutionary..." answered Russell. They were only at the room next to the swimming pool,that was only a few moments. She kept looking outside when Russell spoke. The paperwork wasn't in piles but it had to mean Aquilla needed to have patience to finish each and every page needed to be signed. Now,where was I? Where could I be sent? Was I even alive? Yes,I was alive. I was in fact,at peace. I opened my eyes ever since the surge of power. All I saw was...water. I was in a resevoir,I wasn't drowning. I could breathe underwater. No gills needed. I rubbed my nose with my left hand to check if I had some sort of breathing apparatus I was using. There was nothing. I was walking around the very bottom of the resevoir. Taking steps,looking at the very area around me,my own

physical body. Nothing,nothing explained this...until I was my right hand. There was a Seal. I recalled it from one page out of "Property Of Carter". It had a stream of energy connecting to my heart.

" Whoa..." I said in astonishment. I didn't do anything to it,let it be. I raised my sights and saw stars. I was not far away from where I was. It was the very swimming pool that was structured at Aquilla's home. I was sent there by whomever the being was. I walked into the middle,saw the stars and saw a different tone to the Moon,it wasn't just a hermit's paradise in my eyes. I had a decision,believe in fate or stay underwater. Now,granted,I had the original Elemental conjured and I seemed to be in an attire that perhaps her uncle wouldn't find too reflective of my grammar. I sighed and walked out of the pool. I took a few steps and decided to walk into the house. As I were to set foot,Aquilla appeared in the hallway and her heart sank. She rushed to me and embraced me.

" I'm okay,I'm okay." I kept saying.

" What was all of that?" she cried out. I held her tightly,trying to be more of the relevant nurture she needed.

Aquilla's room
1900 hours

We both sat on the floor of her room,trying to piece out what happened.

" Have you ever believed that there is life on other planets?" she asked sheepishly. I held some answers perhaps but all were speculative and opinionated.

" No. But now,I don't know anything." I said in doubt. I stood up and began pacing back and forth in her room.

" What if he's still around the house? Waiting to prowl on you?" she asked frantically.

" Aquilla,relax..." I pleaded. She stood up,walked up to me and stared deep into me.

" I can't. I know what happened to you isn't haunting you yet but I am worried." she openly said. Tears were gathering in her eyes. I knew how it was about the time needed to comfort her.

" You are under strain,aren't you?" I simply asked.

" Yeah,well,I'm suppose to tough it out." she reasoned.

" I don't doubt your strength but remember that there is more to the world. It's not as big,bad as before,it is vulnerable." I said to her.

" You were,what did they do to you?" she asked me. I began to wander and not latch into the wilderness of reality. Was I in an illusion created by the stress and pressure that has been mounting for years? Was it an orchestrated play done by "Property Of Carter"? It all seemed dangerous. I had to seem as if I know enough.

" Aquilla,I don't remember much. I do want to. What is noted is that I am fine,you are fine." I said. Reassurance was given in the kind words I said.

" I'm sorry,this was meant been our night. Just us. Now,we have overgrown blue lizards,my North uncle having Southern threats. I mean,it's a lot." she said.

" Our night?" I asked. Aquilla walked up to me and kissed me. It was warm,closed both our eyes and I placed my arms on her waist. Her lips stopped touching mine,

" Yes,our night." She said softly. Thoughts ran through my mind,flooded it in fact. I would remember Dreena's words,she kept saying and I quote " Don't rush things with any girl". It was only her and I in her room and the world's young was rested. Rejecting Aquilla now would be preposterous. She seemed insecure.

" Aquilla,I..." I began stuttering,mumbling.

" Xavier,I can't believe that spending days with you could feel as if I could be young forever. When you saw those markings of mine,you didn't see as any less. You are so different and real. I mean,we have our years,our pains but I want this all to be our time." she commented. I noticed she was trembling for some reason,it was perhaps her first time being in such shoes. She was falling for me.

" This is all thoughtful. Very,very thoughtful..." I commented. Her eyes gave a look of worry. I don't need her sexuality as a seal of approval to a feeling unexplained. A feeling that led to her walking down the aisle,having children with me. Should I throw that out of the window for one night and perhaps never even call her again,it all seemed very likely in my age. I held a choice to make. The difference between staring her down and tickling her. The difference between leaving the door open and opening the window. The difference between what I need and what I could have. She had a question about uncertainty.

" But?" she asked my dazed self. I finally decided. A decision that did not need thinking over and over again. I kissed her on her forehead.

" Let's make our time into years. Not days,not weeks. It will all click." I said to her. She showed a wince and we hugged. All I was told by a wise man once was that the girl of your dreams had to be your best friend as well. I settled for that road and not a moment of pheromones. Her and I sat on her bed and conversed over everything.

Within the first half an hour, we forgot about what happened at the swimming pool. About only an hour after, we were bonding intellectually. Our phones were off, the world was silenced. I spoke of my project and how I am tacky and so on. She kept refunding jokes that I was terribly addressing. By 8.30 that very night, we had supper. It wasn't oysters, just pizzas and non-alcoholic beers. The night illuminated by stars and I can say her smile too. You could say time slipped and soon as I knew it, it was 11 pm at night.

" Oh, crap - it's 11 right now..." I said to her, while sitting on the couch, drinking caffeine.

" Time flies right?" she rhetorically asked.

" Yeah, yeah, it does. Let me switch on my phone and try to call Yusuf and ask if he can pick me up." I said. Aquilla had a convenient idea.

" Or...you can sleep over here and go home tomorrow." she suggested. I knew the answer, my expressions were showing. Home at the time was just a bed, I only saw my little twin brothers whom were 15 years of age being the sole reason why I had to return home every night. Yet - I recall both of my brothers saying I deserve the very minutes I spent with Aquilla, even it meant a night. So I just sat out of the calls of the worlds.

" Yeah, let me stay right here...with you." I decided. Consummation didn't take place, I had Dreena's words echoing in my mind. By the end of the cup I was having when I noticed the time, I decided to place my phone in the backpack and only switch it on the next morning.

" Let me toss this piece of obnoxious technology away..." I said standing up to reach my bag that was resting on a chair across the room.

" Yeah, do so please, I should be interviewing you about your projects that I see blooming." she enthusiastically said. I chuckled, still walking to my backpack.

" I'll let you ask seven questions only about it..." I pointed out. We started to play fight naturally.

" Mr Green, I deserve to ask ten questions..." she jokingly said. I searched into my backpack - my own pyjamas, toothbrush and cloth were in it.

" The beauty of mindedness..." I complimented. Aquilla wore her pyjamas, felt as if I had to be aligned with the attire.

" Well, how's we take the interview slow? I need to change." I said.

" Well, not in front of me...you can use my room." she said, she spoke of a lot. I tossed my phone into my bag then rushed to her room with my pyjamas and was done changing in about a minute. I appeared. She squinted her eyes with the state of how dashing I looked in those garments. I sat down with her. Time was spent...everything fell into place within my soul and her soul. By 1 am in the morning, her and I were passed out on the floor of her bedroom, with my manuscript cocooned in her arms, trying to make notes on it with my consent. Let me say it again, everything fell into place within my soul and her soul. Everything. I recall that night to every length. I recall it so well because it was the last real memory of the world that was not of the essence of Wizardry. The last memory where I felt human since I'd be a medium to an ancient power. In that very night, with contentment being a seed - I was finally inducted into being an Elemental Wizard.

Chapter 4 - The Pact 4

25 Columbus Road
0700 hours

I woke up exactly at 7 am. I opened up my eyes to the world. I was on the floor of her bedroom, she wasn't next to me. I looked all over her room in disarray. I began worrying, stood up and ran out of the room, I thought that the being returned for her. I walked into the kitchen then I saw a note on the fridge. It read...

" Morning you, went for my morning jog about an hour ago. There's flapjacks and orange juice on the counter for you. Don't leave without saying goodbye. Signed Aquilla."

My heart sank. I stopped worrying. I saw the breakfast she made and collected the plate and glass, sat down on the lounge and switched on the television. My phone was fully charged and everything was neatly packed. Aquilla walked in while I was eating, it placed a smile in my face.

" Morning..." I said kindly.

" Morning..." she replied. Aquilla sat next to me. She wanted to hear out where my mind is.

" Slept well?" she asked.

" Yeah, yeah, I just...yeah, I mean, I rested great." I said, stuttering.

" That's adorable, what you do when you get nervous." she complimented.

" Oh, it's uh, it's...I just woke up so I'm a little hazed." I said. Aquilla held my hand.

" It's okay. Everything is...okay." she said. The moment didn't feel rushed. I had to leave however, go home, freshen up and neatly place the loaned books in my room. After the meal, I took a quick shower, got accompanied by Aquilla to Yusuf's taxi and was taken to my house alone. I was thinking about her, the whole drive to my house, thinking of those markings around the front of her hips. I recalled how one of the symbols on her matched to one on the being's attire. Yet, I was too distracted by her smile.

10 Fitzgerald Avenue
1000 hours

Walking into my yard, I held the key to the front door, the skies were clear and it seemed it were a day made to stay outside. I received a call. It was a number I have not seen before.

" Hello." I agreed in a friendly tone.

" Mind your step." the voice said. I kept walking and opened the door.

" Pardon me, what did you just say?" I asked. I took the first step, from beneath - an hand grabbed my ankle and pulled me into the floor. I panicked, wouldn't you? I was engulfed into the floor and fell - into my room. The call was still active, I just had to stand up again. I was facing the ceiling and the fast-talking Milo Parker and Umi Bonaparte, whom pulled me into my room - were there. Awaiting for me to stand up.

" Okay, now - listen to the next warning. Keep quiet and hear what we have to say." said Milo. I stood up and dusted myself.

" I'm not afraid of thugs, you don't even have guns." I pointed out. Umi and Milo immediately saw that I was clueless about whom they are.

" He can threaten someone, that's either cute or extremely stupid." commented Umi.

" Xavier, we don't need guns." said Milo. I clenched my fists and ran up to, struck his jaw and he fell on the ground.

" Son of a-" complained an injured Milo, before he could finish his phrase of profanity - I punched him again. Umi quickly weaved a spell and I was hurled away from Milo.

" Everyone in this town prefers fighting, huh?" speculated Milo while standing up. I was trying to figure out how was I even separated from the conflict at ease.

" What the Hell did you do to me?" I asked Umi. She did not need to reply.

" Where's my family?!" I asked shouted.

" Relax, okay? They aren't dead, just got sent on a getaway for a few days." said Milo.

" Okay, look, just take whatever you want, I won't tell the cops." I said.

" You fear them?" asked Umi

" No, I hate them. Too much power given to them." I admitted.

" Yeah,yeah. Me too,I hate this one cop from here. He literally almost mauled me." commented Milo. The chapters from The Property Of Carter flashed in front of my mind. Over and over again. The book had something to say in my subconsciousness. I kept trying to piece the images it painted,I looked out of the zone.

" He's distracted." studied Umi.

" How rude,I mean,we are just going to extort information and even perhaps threaten to send him to Oblivion." pointed out Milo. Finally,I could recollect everything psychologically. This brought something into my life - the presence of a power greater I am. I heard a voice in my mind.

" If you want to stay alive then you must conjure." the voice said. I remembered how to weave spells.

" Hello?" called out Milo. I looked at both of them clear minded. I cleared my throat and began conjuring a Seal,it assembled itself within seconds.

" Oh shit!" cursed Umi. I aimed at Milo with the intention of harm.

" Okay,look,obviously - we all got off to the wrong foot here. I'll say my name." said Milo whom was fully observed by me.

" Yeah? Name's Xavier Green,I'm about to send you in a stretcher." I said firmly.

" Cool,cool...I'm Milo Parker,I'm not entirely a bad guy but I deserve the chance to still keep walking." he said. I sensed a lie.

" I'm not gonna cut off your legs. I'm not that,well,equipped or morally violent." I said. Umi withdrew from the conversation and she had a counter awaiting for me even if I were to attack Milo. At all times in the moments - I was never frightful about my hand holding a Seal. Milo used mind games and taunts to derail his opponents but none of them worked against Cunningham nor I even.

" People from this town don't take bullshit,huh?" he said.

" Yeah,we don't." I said. The Seal lit and it launched violent gusts right at Milo which tackled him right into the next room.

" Yeah,I got something myself." I said,amped and having known what to do next. Run. Not in the frantic and naïve pattern but run. Umi leaped across while her hand was conjuring,I aimed and shot at her then she dodged it.

" Shit!" I cursed. Umi finished conjuring,poured some concoction over my head that was oozy. It flowed through my hair and I faced downwards to prevent it from running into my eyes. Her Seal worked in line with the substance that was used on me. It sprouted a ray that touched the substance,making it illuminate then it evaporated,strangely coarsed into my pores. I fell on the ground.

" Milo,he got his brainwash." said Umi to a sunk Milo. I still remembered everything,her spell failed but they didn't know. I was a novice at wizardry and I needed help.

" How much have you wiped of his memory?" asked Milo.

" Well from the time he left the cab until now." she notified. Milo conjured a spell which was only for architectural damage,it reversed the events to restore it.

" Okay,10 seconds then he regains consciousness." she said.

" Alright,everything seems intact now." said Milo. I started standing up,I prolonged it to over 10 seconds,Milo and Umi resulted in using the friendly approach. I clinched my eyes then pretended it as if the Spell and concoction worked.

" Who,who are you guys?" I asked in a naïve tone. Milo and Umi exchanged a look,believing that I had my memory fractionally erased. Umi had a side of humanity to speak to me first.

" Hello Xavier,my name is Umi." she introduced. Milo felt fitting if he said his name again.

" And I'm Milo." he said. I nodded slowly,seeming unsure but not threatened,I walked slowly between the two standing figures and turned to them.

" Okay,what's going on though?" I said to seem clueless.

" We are wizards,Xavier. We all are." explained Umi. I had a shade of disbelief.

1009 hours

I had to treat them both as if they were guests. I ringed a story regarding how I never knew anything of this craft until a certain age. They were seated at the kitchen and I had three glasses filled with pineapple juice.

" I mean,I always knew I couldn't have been the only one but you are saying that you belong to a collective of people like me?" I asked them.

" Yep,we reside under one space called "The Dark Side Of The Moon" and we are very well equipped." explained an anxious Umi.

" Wow,your estate agent must have made a huge commission." I complimented.

" Well,it's not like that - the place is inherited to the next leader and the next after him or even her." clarified Milo. I wasn't estranged to my ears,it were as if I had been there before. They had accounts of their adventures,never admitted the collateral damage,they spun a twist into certain accounts,didn't mention Okinawa right away,this was all in passing. I,to be honest,didn't care where were my parents were. Why care now? Those bridges were dilapidating so I didn't even ask where they were. I felt orphaned...

" It explains my state of mind - I knew I was resented." I said sadly. They fell into the same routine. Milo held back the snarly remarks.

" Can I join you,guys?" I asked cheerfully.

" Uh,it's not that easy..." said Umi.

" How?" I asked.

" You are a novice." explained Milo.

" I can learn quickly." I said rapidly.

" That's not the point,we are just after something that brings too many dangers that could get you killed." she said.

" You are talking about "The Property Of Carter",aren't you?" I asked. Milo and Umi became attentively.

" Where on Earth did you hear the name?" asked a speculative Milo.

" About a week or so. That book used to be a legend until I saw it in my hands. But it's circulating." I excused. They didn't have to know that I held the book,rather I might know where it is.

" Circulating? Who has it now?" asked Umi. I knew of one consistent name.

" It's a war veteran called Eric Copper." I said,diverting all directions to Eric.

" Yes!" celebrated Milo.

" Yeah,that's the guy now." I said.

" Where is he now?" she asked.

" Out of the country,I'll contact him though." I said. Then I started the first pact.

" You know,I was thinking,if I could get it safely back,can I join you guys?" I asked. Umi and Milo looked towards each other and nodded at once.

" Alright,welcome." inducted Milo. I shook his hands.

" We'll have to train you prior the exchange. We trust you. Sadly,you have to leave Knights Run for about a few months." she conditioned.

" No problem at all,thank you." I said.

" Meet you at the hill called Giant's Stub. At 11." said Milo.

" So in about an hour?" I asked.

" No,11 at night." she said.

" Alright,can't wait." I said,cheering the moment with the glasses of pineapple juice. I set out to actually find clarity in my life and humor what I have which was the ability to conjure these spells which were all named.

Knights Run Precinct

1141 hours

After the two bid farewell until the next meeting,I scurried to Cunningham's workplace. One wonders,why the police? Well,they are a medium. I need the very medium for the betterment of my life. I checked out a plan in my mind that only needed to make deals with Milo and Umi firstly,Cunningham and finally Aquilla. I had to be co-operative with all of them. Funny how I just had to be within my temperament even now. I had it all in writing,how I wanted to infiltrate these delinquents of the Dark Side Of The Moon and knowing enough for the police and even the global governance to intervene and hopefully eradicate. I was at his office where I stood and waited for him to finish the piece

" Okay,this is all bull..." he commented.

" Wow,what you said,that's not what I had in mind." I replied.

" Kid,you are a great writer. Heck,you could be the next Shakespeare but this is not some movie pitch. People die." he said.

" I met Milo about two hours back,earned his trust." I said.

" Whoa,wait...how?" he questioned.

" It doesn't matter. What matters is that they both are shell-shocked over what I can do." I explained.

" Aside for writing "Roses are red,violets are blue",what can you do?" he asked. I harnessed energy and conjured a Seal on my right hand and lifted it closely to my face.

" Still having doubts?" I asked. Cunningham was in belief over what I effortlessly did. He applauded,clapping his hands and was beyond impressed.

" Let's take a walk,pal." he said cheerfully.

" Cool,where are we going? To a top facility of officials?" I asked.

Cunningham arrested me and placed me under a drunk tank. I was amongst the town's drunk,a girl named Emily Hedge and a few other people whom were having festivities early that day.

" Okay,I hate cops..." I said,placing weight on the wall with my forehead. I stepped back and began to conjure a new spell.

" What are you doing?" asked a voice,I looked over and it was a girl.

" Oh,hi..." I greeted. The spell faded.

" First time here?" she asked.

" You can say that. And you?" I replied.

" Well,this is my coping mechanism after a heartbreak so I lost count." she said.

" I'm sorry,they are idiots,trust me,they are." I consoled. The door was opened and an officer announced something.

" Nora,le's go. Your mum is here." The officer said. I was speaking to Nora,she began walking to the door.

" Thank you,you are pretty cool for a stranger." she admitted then left,Cunningham walked in.

" Made friends I see?" he asked.

" Yeah,I mean,I gotta have people I trust. What about you?" I asked. The cameras were momentarily switched off and Cunningham held a file.

" Xavier,this is all dangerous. All risky too but something has to happen." he pointed out.

" Yeah and if I should be the sacrifice that's needed to bring harmony into the world then so be it." I replied.

Cunningham nodded genuinely this time and finally could entrust me with the infiltration of this military team that relied only on the dark arts of sorcery.

" Gain their trust,know everything about them and arrive back home." he instructed.

" No problem,I ask one thing in return. I need to know who is behind the banning of my membership at Morshower's Library." I asked.

" That's all? No money,no girls?" he asked.

" Money will find it's way and I have Aquilla,so no. Just that,Detective." I clarified.

" Alright,it's confirmed." he said. Cunningham handed over the file to me,I grasped it and it was nicknamed "Chernobyl".

" When do you leave?" he asked.

" Tonight. Will be gone for weeks,learning how to pull card tricks." I said. Cunningham chuckled.

" I'll be handing over a bag filled with things you will need,call it the Backpack Back-up." he notified.

" Trademarked,got it. I need to go." I said.

" You are dismissed,Green. Just don't mess up." he said so.

" Yeah,got it." I confirmed.

" Or the nukes will fly all over." he warned.

25 Columbus Road

1315 hours

I had the issued bag,my own bag and spent another taxi fee to rush to Aquilla's home. I had to do one more pact,it was not easy to say nor think of. I was forced to walk away from my home,for a few months,all for clear of mind and a distraction from so much. I felt as if Aquilla would be too busy to handle my tantrums and this new gift I conceded wasn't going to make anything less complex. I had to be vague about the chances,vague about my whereabouts. By now,her parents were back home and I just didn't need to go above the front porch to say my piece then leave. Was I selfish? Relying heavily on myself? I could be sparking unneeded fire for a row of questions. Welcome to my logic where I believe in trouble more than amicable endings. I needed to seeth comfort in my method. So how does one stay consistent in speaking and trying to unfurl what can't be explained? Write a letter. Since Milo was after "Property Of Carter",I had to find a safe house for it. It couldn't be my own house,they barged in so discreet and I had to pretend I am amnesiac to commence earning their trust. My residence could be a somewhat decoy,a delay tactic. Crowning it a blur if they were to raid it. With just two minutes away from arriving,I

thought of Aquilla's place as being the principle place to guard it and conceal the book from anyone hostile. I conditioned my pact with her over "Property Of Carter" heavily now, for it to be a symbolic and sentimental object in the case of what was taking place for her and I.

"I got to give her the book..." I said to myself, realizing how my life would not be shelved away from her. The car yielded with her house just across the road. I stepped out and told Yusuf to leave since I'd travel by feet back home. It was not an easy visit for me nor my heart, this was someone I cared about and it made the letter grow in length. I was walking steadily to her house with a worry within my eyes. I might have gotten attached not committed to say. Arriving to the front door, I unzipped my backpack and took out the book and held it on my left hand. I knocked and waited for a response. I can smell the aroma of food streaming through the window and tantalizing my senses. The door was opened in a rush and there she was, with an apron on.

"Hey you..." I greeted.

"Hello my Swahili better half." she said in a warm gesture. I shared a fading smile.

"What's going on?" she asked. I had to be frank and honest.

"I, er, I'll be going away for a while. I'm leaving Knights Run for a few months." I announced. She had an expression of shock, she then concealed it.

"I'm, I'm having mixed feelings about it, I just, I can know why, right?" she asked. I took her arm, she took off the apron then we sat down on the porch. I broke out signs of reassurance.

"Hey, look, I know, it's pretty messed up but I'll return home, at least for one day each week. Let's say every Friday until I am done with the deal I am trying to make work." I said.

"Alright, but exactly what is all of this about?" she asked.

"I'm looking for sponsors, my projects need the funding. I got one so I need to somewhat see their resources and speak figures with them." I said which had some truth within it.

"So, you can ready Lighthouse in time?" she asked.

"Yeah, it seems so. I'm just on the verge, I know it." I said.

"I want to know everything. About the project, about you, about what are the risks, I just want to be there even if it's thousands of miles apart." she pleaded.

"Okay, after a month, you'll travel with me. Since your Finals will be done and we can spend Summer too." I said. Aquilla hugged me tightly. It was another way to say that she needs me back whenever the stars aligned themselves. We clearly were both head over heels and our eyes only saw each other. We broke the embrace and we slowly kissed, for about seconds then stopped. The kiss was warm, fueled with emotions. She looked at me right the eyes to see how honest I was.

"Now, go into world, I'll only be yours even when you are away." she said, she rested her head on my neck. I passed Property Of Carter to her.

"Keep this safe for me, read the letter when I finally appear on television." I instructed. She held both and we had moments of silence and tranquility. Bertram saw us from afar but wouldn't say a word nor approach us, it seemed he only had a father's concern yet a human understanding that we needed the privacy in that time. I sat down with her for some time, the time that passed felt connected.

10 Fitzgerald Avenue
1907 hours

With the sun setting, I had to ready my journey into the world of wizardry mercenaries and still entail my secrecy always. I only had limited time to process how I am one of them which would explain why society made me an exile to its humdrum and predictable ways. I had to recall a few spells depending on my mood. I noticed that I had spells based on the four elements and I can even converge certain spells, formulate Elemental weaving which soaks in a lot of energy from the host. I got a call from Dreena while I was prepping. I answered.

"Hello Dreena..." I greeted her.

"Evening little one, where are you?" she asked.

"I, uh, um... I'm at my house right now." I said.

"Okay, good. I had this dream about you, felt as if it were written off a story." she said.

"Dream? Sounds hectic." I commented.

"Not at all. Just don't be distracted and you'll be fine. I was calling to also check up on you." she said.

"Thank you, big sister but I'm fine, I'll just be a lot more difficult to track down now but I'll be a phone call away for the people I care about." I notified.

"Alright, seems fair enough. Say hello to Aquilla for me. Goodnight, little brother." she bid farewell.

" Will do,goodnight,Dreena." I replied then the call ended. I placed my phone down and saw a text sent by Aquilla also hoping for the best regarding my undisclosed venture. I replied and then switched my phone off.
" It's time to hang out with murderers." I said,picking up my bags and leaving my home to save Earth.

Giant's Stub,Knights Run
2250 hours

Our hills were called Giant's Stub in the collective. This was all based on a town legend about how once there was a giant whom tried to enslave the first inhabitants of the time eons ago and the oppressor stub his toes into the hills then fell over and met his demise,freeing the people before us. The tale was told generations to generations. I was at the North Hills of Giant's Stub,along with my backpacks,I arrived early enough. I had my first guitar and was strumming a few chords,trying to piece out a song. It was dead quiet and I was trying to configure my mental state - I had was going to be inducted into The Dark Side Of The Moon,I needed to be sharp and above par with my senses. I placed away my guitar and heard shrills,I took a few slow steps and awaited an attack. The shrills faded away and it became quiet again. I was on high alert,had drastic measures of retaliation and I was in the mindset of war. I took a few more steps,nothing was on sight but that did not partition that I needed to drop my guard especially now since the shrills were meant to startle me. All elaborate mindgames,I needed to taunt back,seeth through the tactics. I couldn't decide the most effective phrase,I needed to jot them down first. I was a scribe,needed to pen most things before saying them. The sky darkened I heard a thud from the woods,it was a number of heavy steps,psychologically I became entirely threatened. There was something rushing towards me and I was honestly not taking steps away. I heard snarls that shivered branches and leaves. It was a wild beast of some sort. I started to breathe heavily and control my hands from trembling. It took one more step in the dark,I still stayed on my very spot. Then even in the solid pitch black,it opened its eyes. There were blue and were hypnotic,fearless. I gapsed in the crucial breaking point of staying in tune and not showing that I were intimidated.

" Xavier?" called out Milo. I shut my eyes and opened,the beast was gone,I barely even saw it,Milo stood right beside my luggage.

" You okay,man?" he asked.

" Yeah,I just had,I had a long day." I said. I walked to my very belongings. More people would arrive,about four people including Umi.

" Is this him?" asked Dominic.

" Yeah,meet Xavier Green. The Elemental wizard." announced Umi.

" I thought he'd be taller." commented Lance who was shuffling a deck of cards.

" Well,look...he knows something about the Maxima." revealed Milo.

" The Property Of Carter,you say...okay,Xavier,what do you know?" asked their leader Lucias who was reliant on not lashing out for intel then before.

" Eric took it,it's all over now." I said the very lie.

" Okay,where is Eric now?" asked Hannah whom had her arms folded the entire gathering.

" He got called in to serve. He's a veteran." I said,which was completely true. Eric Copper did exist,he calls Knights Run his home even when he is called in. I admired Eric over his bravery but his mind was sat with ghost stories that could leave you startled for recurring times. I had an alibi and would be asked a lot more questions.

" And when will he return?" asked Dominic.

" This Summer,he'll be here." I said.

" Alright,let's get it confirmed you can get it from him personally,right?" asked Lucias with a tone of how he could kill me if I were to flinch and told any lies right to them. I walked up right to his face bravely and gave an answer I was reassured of.

" I don't believe in confirming with you. I can work with you for a common goal that will serve everyone fairly. Hence that's a team...so the book's fine but I am not a pawn at a way to acquire it." I bravely said to his face. Milo was significantly scared for me in that moment,he felt that I should have been lectured into the protocol of meeting Lucias before he left with only jotting down the setting of the rendezvous.

" You got guts,Xavier and I respect that completely." he said in a pleased tone,I was baffling and little lost. I earned Lucias' respect by not cowering away. Lucias placed up his right hand in the manner for me to shake it.

" Welcome to the collective." he said and I shook his hand. After the handshake,we had to run off from my small city.

" Okay,we gotta go." alerted Lucias. Milo took up a bag whilst Lance took the other,I had my signature backpack and the Backpack Backup. We started walking westward into the trees. Aquilla called me,I answered right away.

" Hey,how is it going?" she asked.

" Well,they are impressed already." I said.

" Alright,sweet,just stay well." she asked me.

" I will,I'll text you after midnight and we can talk." I promised.

" Alright,um,but that's an hour away." she pointed out.

" Yeah,thing is,I need to just clear my mind a little,I can't afford to be distracted right now." I said. Aquilla kept quiet,there was something she placed in her mind to say but it wouldn't happen,she scratched her hair and decided to prolong what she would have said that night.

" Alright,um,well,I,er...I'll talk to you then." she confirmed.

" Hugs and kisses to you,pretty lady." I bid farewell,wringling a compliment with,Aquilla scoffed and would reply.

" Hugs and kisses to you,my only one." she kindly said. The call ended right after and I switched off my phone to level my mind and be integrated into the true mission. I was still walking while I was on the call,wondering where exactly we are going. Umi was leading the pack with Lucias conversing with Hannah about something important. The captivated Lance was reading and I could only inquire with either Milo or Dominic whom were having systematic talks about the collective.

" Milo,are we almost there?" I asked.

" Yeah,we are,just chill and don't show us her pictures." he pleaded.

" Wait - her pictures?" I asked.

" We overheard your call,you got a girl. Clearly you care about her and she does too. Make time for her,the rest will sort itself out." he advised.

" Oh,okay,I'll just do that but she doesn't know about this whole Wizardry life." I told him.

" Xavier,please understand this - we are not heroes. No secret identities,no needing to save people. You get to live longer believing in that." addressed Milo. I decided not to say anything else from there,other to confirm what I heard.

" I got it." I replied.

" We are here." screamed Umi. I ran and overlapped Lance,Hannah and Lucias to see exactly where we were. I ran through the woods and there was a large patch of land that was clear,nothing seemed to be occupying the space. I was entirely confused with this development.

" Wait,what?" I asked. They gave me space to try and figure out exactly what was happening. The classic variation between magic and wizardry. I needed to let it soak into the moment at first. I noticed a few things regarding the space without walking around it. I closed my eyes and I thought of an existing spell. I opened my eyes then formulated a Seal within seconds. It was categorized as a spell based on the element of Fire. I fueled it then aimed across the space and the Seall produced a blaze of fire. It seemed like a very high delevop forest fire. It was breathtaking. Soon enough,the fire began cancelling a spell,the craft was cloaked using a spell and it ashed away. The fire made a veil around the craft and soon as it extinguished - the craft appeared. It seemed futuristic and not of this world. It was also militaristic. The entire collective started walking to where I stood.

" What? What is it?" I asked.

" It is the Cruiser 47,it's a concept aircraft that was designed and created by an member of an alumni that Milo is also a part of. He was cool enough to donate it to us a few years back." explained Umi.

" Seems cool." I said.

" It is. No debate about it,Green." said Lance.

" Yeah,but since Novice here decided to light up the place,we seriously need to leave now. Let the pilot take control." said Dominic.

" Who's the pilot?" I asked.

" Me. I'm the pilot." replied Milo.

" Alright,cool,I guess we need to leave." I speculated. We all started to board,in a simple single file,I was the last one on the line. I was right behind Umi and I had something to say.

" I am a fan of what you do with mirrors." I whispered to her.

" Yeah but you currently have seven years' bad luck." she replied in the same volume.

" Well,only time will tell if I am lucky or not..." I said.

" Rather be focused and know what you want." she answered. We were all boarded. The craft took off and we were soaring the skies. During the flight,almost everyone was silent or they were reading,I saw that Hannah was in deep sleep without even needing to count sheep. I was on my phone,sending texts,starting to miss Aquilla. The memories were almost recalled every time my phone alerted me. Sometime into the night,I passed out cold and had a more symbolic dream,I saw inscriptions in stone,Elemental Seals and a crowd of people from an ancient civilization,Aquilla was amongst them,I reached out to her in the dream then I woke up. I was left behind,they

already left and were probably sleeping even. I stood up from my seat and walked off the aircraft, finally seeing the Hangar Of The Dark Side Of The Moon.

Dark Side Of The Moon, country unknown...
0300 hours

The hangar was very immense, it cocooned the craft and there was a flight of industrial stairs I had to climb up on. I rushed up and would only wonder where to from there. I made it to the top of the stairs and went to the open door, walked right through it. I was finally at their lair and wandered around the hallways, trying to navigate to their whereabouts. It took about just 3 and a half minutes and I made it to the boardroom which was in-house. I swung open the door slowly and Hannah was seated, with files that she was passing through. She lifted her head then saw me. I walked in slowly as well.

"Oh, great, you are up," she said.

"Where are we? My network has been spiking since we arrived," I replied.

"You are at The Dark Side Of The Moon. The only geographical place in the world that we really call home," she verified.

"So we are out of Earth?" I questioned.

"Well, only your mind can govern the answer for that..." she vaguely said.

"I thought setting your plane on fire would have been enough for you all to halt the riddles," I said in the sake of honest.

"These aren't riddles, these aren't tricks or illusions but the right questions for your state of mind," she said in reassurance. The boardroom had a round table, when sorting the files, Hannah sat on the Northern side of it. I walked and sat next to her. I was about to be briefed around everything. The team, the whereabouts, everything. The files could be their compromise if they knew I was an informant to the authorities, this was pressure to helm even when I was just inducted.

"Okay, you need to read through all of this. Get the knowledge into your mind, you'll have training in the morning," she instructed.

"Wait, there's a theory in sawing people in half?" I asked.

"Nope, this isn't magic. Look, you need to understand what you are going through before you can accept it then harness it. Wizardry requires the soul to bind to the elements of very ancient powers," she explained. I had an understanding of what makes wizardry different. It's volatile, meant for someone whom can construct a mental wall where can navigate in the dark. Now I had to agree with her and begin learning. She slid the files right to me.

"Read, know, practice. On repeat, every day," she said.

"Got it, no problem," I said.

"Oh, your room is number 4, don't get lost," she notified. Hannah left the room while I started to look through the file on the base, it has been around for over one thousand years by now, always had restorations but never changed locations. Now, I could know who is who in the collective.

0700 hours

I woke up without hassling or needed to sleep further. From last night, I passed out, scattered around where the files across the desk of my cozy room. I wore the clothes from the day before, my luggage wasn't even unfolded. I just swapped shirts and went downstairs to see their morning routine. When I got there, everyone was still eating breakfast.

"Morning, everyone..." I said awkwardly, with just another step left to be on the floor.

"Morning Xavier," the all greeted back in a sequence, having Umi initiate the replies. I walked to the breakfast table, grabbed a bowl then poured in cereal and milk. The conversations were lesser now, everyone seemed to have had an agenda for the day. After a few spoons, I felt I had to say something.

"What will we be up to right now?" I openly asked.

"Well, we all need to improve, a lot. So it's training and training and hopefully Lance and I can make the plan for the raid in South Africa," answered Milo.

"South Africa? Wait, which country is South Africa?" I questioned.

"You know, South Africa..." said Milo, in a bad attempt to answer.

"Yeah, South Africa. The only country in the world that switches off power for a couple of hours," replied Lance.

" Sounds like Africa's version of The Dark Side." I replied.

" It's not that bad..." assured Umi.

" Well,just know that we need a king protea then we are done." explained Hannah.

" So it's not really a raid,just a simple trip to the flower shop and back?" I said with disappointment.

" Well,look,I think South Africa is more relaxed in when Winter creeps in." said Lucias.

" Why not scale buildings? Duck bullets and even lose track of so much when a real raid is happening?" I asked the collective.

" I have been working on this case." said Milo

" Oh,shit..." cursed a nervous Umi.

" Let's look for The Cradle Of Gexir." he insisted. The whole teams groaned except for me.

" Whoa,wait,what's the Cradle Of Gexir?" I asked.

" Well,it's like this,Xavier - Gexir was an established ruler of an island in the Pacific Ocean and had some heck of a reign." replied Lance in a hyper tone.

" Why is Gexir such a big deal?" I asked.

" Gexir traded with Persia,Egypt and many more civilizations,made wealth,the country became very advanced." clarified.

" Sounds like the original entrepreneur,what was being traded most?" I asked.

" Secrets. Well,the secrets being wizardry." answered Umi. I slurred the last of the milk.

" So,technically - some countries experiment on our craft?" asked Hannah.

" Experiment? They are trying to weaponize it. For military uses even." said Milo.

" So,that's the plan,steal it from them so there are no more wars?" I asked.

" Nope,so there can be no more natural disasters. When they abuse their resources,there is a spike and millions die. We need to stop this." urged Milo. I got a held a question in my mind,do I sabotage this very mission I'd agree to take on so that they are neutralized then handed to the authorities or do I let them succeed even with the slightest of chances so that our Earth and its habitants have a fate that is pending on how six young adults and I tinker with the Cradle? I vouched to obtain the Cradle,the politics seemed blurry to involve my vision in.

" I vote that we chase down the Cradle,anyone oppose?" I bravely said in the open. No one raised their hands against the motion I proposed.

" Alright,Xavier,it's settled,we retrieve Gexir's Cradle in two weeks,train,learn and don't stop improving." notified Milo. Everyone agreed with the terms Milo set regarding the mission. It was beyond just what I signed up for. I needed to be dismissed.

" I got to go for now. I have to read up some stuff." I said and stood up with my bowl to rinse it clean.

" Uh,yeah,you need to go to the Training Zone,work on your spell conjuring and reflexes." notified Hannah. I placed the bowl in the correct place of the cupboard.

" Okay,cool. No time like the present to get ready for a caper I guess." I replied.

" Go to the basement,grab a costume and get to the Zone." she instructed.

" Got it." I answered.

" By the way,what did Eric say concerning The Mantra? Is it giving him hallucinations or bad dreams in any sort?" asked Lucias.

" No,no,he's okay,he will be here this June in time for Summer. Just got to be more patient about it." I pleaded.

" Yeah,it's not like someone is going to get killed if we don't get "The Property Of Carter" from Eric." said Milo in a sarcastic tone whilst facing Lucias.

" Now,If you have to excuse me - I have to go fit in a unitart and break a few bones." I joked.

" Someone has a sense of humor..." said Hannah,pointing out my comic trait.

" Told you that the amount of sugar in the cereal is too much,now we got Xavier hyper." commented the opinionated Lance.

" Well,what can you say? I'm ready for the adjustment." I said in a brass tone.

" If you have any problems,you can talk to me." offered the brute Dominic.

" Whoa,wait...I already find it easier to speak to Umi,so I'll do so." I rejected.

" I'm just noting that you need guidance and since I'm older-" said Dominic whom was trying to justify.

" Maturity isn't equivalent to age. So,Umi it is." I interrupted.

" Well,there goes my chance to be a mentor but look,I respect the decision." he said.

" Cool,let me finally leave and get ready..." I said then started making my way to the basement. I was not in a hurry nor was I slacking,I needed to recall certain pages from "Property Of Carter" and try to gather evidence against the collective as well so I resorted to surveillance. I reached the basement and collected the gear needed for Wizardry training. I marched to the Training Zone. I stood by the door outside the Zone,took a deep breath.

" Finally..." I said to myself.

Chapter 5 - The Hocus Pocus Adjustment

0725 hours

I was finally geared up and ready for the first training session.

" This unitart itches..." I began complaining as I scratched myself. Hannah chuckled,she was facilitating my training from now on.

" Good call knowing it's a unitart." she complimented my guessing.

" Well,it's not that bad. But I mean,did you guys ever clean this up?" I asked.

" To be honest,it's been in the basement for months so...but look,ultimately,you can manage. Just don't get injured." she said,the words echoed at me then I remember sustaining an injury from the afternoon I met Aquilla. This was something I needed to mention right away.

" Well,that might be a little too late to worry about..." I said.

" Okay,and why is that?" she asked.

" I got injured. On my right knee,still healing as we speak." I confessed.

" Okay,I have a solution." she said,I was handed over a knee pad that I placed on.

" Okay,but why the guard?" I asked.

" It's enchanted,the guard sorta let's your knee be hundred percent as long as it is on..." she explained.

" All of these gadgets and planning but you are still hesitant about the stealing the Cradle." I said,wondering why there was so much room for doubt within themselves.

" The Cradle isn't just a heist,we are threatening the world security so it'd be normal to have jitters." she elaborated. I could not botch the plan,I could die so I had follow through,learn and grasp everything I know and report to Cunningham,see Aquilla and confess the truth too.

" Okay,let's train you,Green and see what an Elemental is made up of." she said and training commenced. I had to do sprints,trained my reaction time and agility by firing Wizardry rods that hurled me away whenever I was too close,I stumbled a lot with trying to react on time. Hannah introduced the Survivor's guide where I had to stay conscious for as long as I could in a simulated environment that resembled a jungle. After 100 minutes,I knocked out cold by a speeding boulder. There was the water break,which was about 30 minutes since I needed to recuperate. The training enlisted balance,I was suspended and had to skip on hovering platforms that could drop if I don't gather balance with five minutes of being on it. I flourished in that activity. There was proceeding,after all of the grueling tasks and so forth,I managed to reach the peak of the first day of training.

1129 hours

I was just panting but not loudly and almost had a few bruises,the unitart was merely damaged on the right shoulder and was stained badly,it seemed as it were drenched in dirt then handed to me.

" You know,now this suit has to get cleaned." I said to her,sitting down and drinking a glass of water.

" You didn't complain nor quit at any of the times in the training." she said to me,with astonishment.

" Yeah,I mean...that's what had to happen. Keep going,stumble,a lot,sure but I need to keep working." I simply explained. Hannah held figures,the entire Zone was computerized and has been capturing my run through it.

" Yes but your will,your resiliencem Are you sure you weren't weaving at a young age?" she asked.

" Nope,I,I doubt it..." I said then took sips of water,rubbed my nose.

" Yeah and it seems that you could be a frontman in the raid. There's just one more activity left then we are done for today." she said. I stood up and took a few steps to her.

" Okay,what's the last thing?" I asked. She just sighed.

" Oh,let me guess,banzai skydiving,catching bullets,dancing?" I tried guess,whilst I named my list of possible and very tormenting exercises,she delivered a head butt to my nose,a vicious one. I fell on the floor,not bleeding but wondering why would she act so violent,did she figured it out that I was working for the police? No,she didn't,this was the final activity.

" No,sparring against me." she answered. I tried standing but she weaved a spell that tossed me across the vast room. I got up to my feet quick then sprinted to her,she began weaving,aimed and missed. I slid,grabbed her ankle then pulled her down. After she fell,I created distance between her and I by taking a few steps back. I conjured a Wind-type spell that could scrape her without cutting deep,I needed to remain mild in my counter-attacks since I didn't know exactly how immense my power was. She was lying there,gaining scrapes.

" How about you say 'Uncle' and I'll stop?" I asked with a tease.

" I'm not that easy to beat." she said,she was laying down,taking the punishment of my spell. I could not let my guard in this sparring session,Hannah started to stand up and distributed more power into the Seal,it didn't help,she was up on her feet.

" What the?" I gasped. I dropped the Seal,seeing it wasn't as effective.

" Keep up." she adviced. Hannah started assembling a Seal called "Ghost Fog" that was aimed and used at me. I hit the wall,fell and had a problem of standing up,trying to gain consciousness of where on Earth I was. Whilst,I was stumbling with that - Hannah began conjuring "Chain Story". She tried to sting me with the spell but I ducked in time then squandered her concentration by chanting a word.

" Charkazja!" I said on impulse once then there was an energy burst originating from me that swayed Hannah away and it was at an impasse. Briefly so. Now I recalled,I was recruited because of they were entirely impressed over my insightful and not my spells. I was an Elemental wizard,one of the rarest kids in the world because of their superiority. It was time I lived up to the name of being one. I began conjuring an Elemental spell which infused all of the four elements. I allowed her to stand up.

" Let's bully..." I said to her,regulating those words as a taunt we were across each other in the matter of distance apart. She conjured and we both fired at each other at once. The energies were trying to overpower each other. It was the battle of who was more powerful,the rays were equally managed then Hannah placed all of her power into her Seal then her power started to absorb mine. Something was triggered within my mind,it wasn't a page from Maxima,just something genetic. I flickered my fingers in a sequence then my Seal was raised,immensely destroying her ray then striking her. Thrown into the solid wall and defeated. I walked up to the slowly and limping since the knee guard became damaged since the surge of power I experienced. She rolled over and face the ceiling. I reached out my arm to her to help her up. In respect,she accepted my help. The training was adjourned. This brought a decision amongst the team that I would only learn about in the very evening.

1701 hours

There was a conversation amongst the very six wizards I was trying to familiarize myself with. They were had findings on the co-ordinates of where the Cradle is and my statistics the training session.

" This guy is a beast..." complimented Umi when she gleamed at them.

" This is not rigged,not faked. Xavier seems to be at our level,if not higher already." said Lance whom slightly suffered an inferiority complex without showing it.

" Yes,he is a powerhouse so now - what's the way forward with him?" asked Dominic.

" He should stop with working at the Training Zone." notified Hannah.

" Whoa,whoa,why? It's not like he's a God." commented Milo.

" It's not that,it's because he is human. Xavier has a knee injury that will be fully recovered with only a few days before the raid." she explained.

" So we let him have free hours already? Learn more spells and perfect that without needing mandatory training?" asked Lucias.

" Yes,he needs to recover." cited Hannah.

" Well,seems fair but I say he should be shelved for the raid,he could be a liability." said Milo.

" We need as many people for this mission as possible,Milo. I mean,this is very dangerous and obviously some of us might not live after the mission." warned Umi.

" She's got a point..." said Lance.

" I'm sorry...don't we all remember what we do? I don't think even our residential Rafin here doesn't remember too.

We have been passed down a torch and were chosen as successors for a cause. The cause that was such a threat to society,politics were born. We don't need to play their games,we don't need the world's pity but let me tell you this,we can't die just yet. This is Phase 4,we only have 2 more years then everything will be ours. We can't risk all of that now..." addressed Milo to the rest of the collective. He was right,blindly so.

" Then let's risk it knowing well it will work out." proposed Hannah.

" And there worst were to happen?" asked Milo.

" With Xavier on our side,it won't." reassured Hannah. Lucias breathed out heavily while Lance was caught in the hype of the discussion. Umi and Dominic sided with Milo because they both felt I wasn't yet integrated into the violence in an uncontrolled environment,I would fumble a lot and even freeze whenever I had to murder a security personeel. Ultimately,I was medically cleared to go on the raid that would take place in less than two weeks from the day.

1747

I was in my designated room, walking back and forth while reviewing the footage I captured of everyone. I had about close to 3 hours of footage and an hour was lost since I was sparring with Hannah, it was badly damaged. Nothing was incriminating enough however, they were just simply practicing spells and joking around seals. To my understanding, this would ripple a civil war between humans and the humanized gods called Wizards. I needed to box the collective alone, not their civilization, only God knew how many more exist. I needed to film the raid and finally be able to halt them all. Before time, I tidied the gizmos into the given bag, zipped then placed it away. I was familiar with my room by now so I navigated around easily, grew fond of how I had a window and the very window had a view. I was curious to see where exactly we were, I never peeped outside. Now I was a few steps to finally know where on Earth, or out of Earth, I stood. My door was never closed, never locked, I couldn't be dubbed secretive. What I always did was leave it slightly opened, welcomed anyone in. While I was still wondering to see into the outside world, an email reached my handheld. It alerted me, I took out from pocket, viewed it. It was from Cunningham, I skimmed it through it quickly, a few points I took into mind then one was the fact that only needed conclusive evidence that could be incriminating enough and that could justify that the collective could not be trusted nor obligated to use their superior and extraordinary abilities and I could gain acceptance to any university in the entire world and fundings from an organizations that will sort out the living and tuition fees. This was my breakthrough, I felt my reality shake when I read this then there was knock on the door. I placed my phone away slowly, still trying to make sense of why the immensity of the reward escalated to such connection but now I had someone to attend to.

"You can enter..." I said openly. It was Hannah, she walked in to speak.

"Were you naked when I knocked?" she asked.

"No, I was just out of the zone, I'm sorry." I apologized for answering a little later.

"It's completely okay, I won't be long here for a long time either way." she notified.

"Oh, it's not a social visit I take it." I said.

"Yes, sadly so. Perhaps after the Cradle, we can talk more and go out often." she said.

"As long as it stays platonic." I told her, being reminded of Aquilla.

"Yes, I know the lane, you should too..." she hinted. Perhaps Hannah had a suitor right then.

"Okay, so I gotta get back to the unitart and sprints now?" I asked.

"Nope, um, clearly you are ready, your knee needs to recover in time for the raid because you are selected for the team. So the good news is that you won't be need intense training anymore, you just need to practice spells at your own time and so on." she reported.

"Yes, this is great...whoa, wait...what's the bad news?" I asked.

"You will have to work with Milo and Lance." she said a tone of worry.

"Okay, now, that's bad. On the bright side, I got a few hours before that train wreck of a task starts." I said in relief.

"Actually, you start tonight." she revealed.

1900 hours

It was after supper, the food was well cooked and I cleared up my plate within about 5 minutes which was no different from breakfast nor the late lunch I had. I grabbed and wore a hoodie then proceeded into going to work with Lance and Milo at the hangar, they were already there by the 19th hour, already working on the Cruiser. They were mechanics in the moment.

"I need the monkey wrench..." instructed Milo whom was working on the engines of the craft, Lance passed over the monkey wrench while he was working on the power source of the craft which was an orb that was sheltered around a solid steel container, it glowed green in color.

"This craft is not entirely powered by hamsters on wheels, isn't it?" asked Lance.

"Yeah, but it's safer than plutonium but surely more powerful than the Sun. Yet we can carry around in tiny hands like it's a marble." said Milo. I walked up to them with my hands in my pockets but seemed very enthusiastic. Milo stopped working and saw me.

"Well, well...we got a novice here. Why do you walk around like you won the lottery?" he asked.

"I just, I am all good." I vaguely said.

"Yeah, she didn't leave you, huh?" asked Lance.

" If you did win the lottery,congratulations and slide in my first commission. If not,we still got to work." said Milo.

" Alright,cool,what can I do right now?" I asked. Milo and Lance exchanged a look.

" Whoa,what?" I asked unsettled. Milo and Lance dropped whatever they are doing and went to the interior of the craft,I followed,there had to talk to me simply. It wasn't about being hostile anymore. When I got in there were poker chips,snacks and so forth.

" Cool...now there's something that doesn't need unitarts." I said. Milo offered a Cuban cigar then he took one out himself.

" Look,you are brother now. Not some black kid we thought stole the convinient store from across the street,you are one of us,now let's congratulate that." he said and lit his Cuban cigar.

" Yeah,I don't smoke nor drink." I said.

" More rum for me I guess." said Lance whom was already drinking.

" No problem,I guess you don't get sedated from your own supply." said Milo.

" No,it's not about the street morality but my own conscious sobriety." I said. Milo always had food and refreshments that could accomodate people of my calibre. He offered a beverage of the famous coldrink that was renowned.

" Here you go,rookie." he said as he handed it out. I took it and opened it.

" Thanks,Milo." I said,feeling exhausted,it seemed that Lance and Milo would often take this sort of progression when working on the Cruiser and the other accessories. They would have food,play poker,reminisce but always finish on time. I needed to ask Milo a question or even more right away.

" Wait,Milo,you smoke cigarettes?" I asked.

" What? Hell no! Okay,wait let me explain all of this since you are the new guy. I don't take nicotine,I only smoke Cubans under three types of occasions." said Milo.

" Okay,I'm afraid to ask this,probably I'll end up in Purgatory since I might slit my wrists but why?" I asked in a jokingly way.

" No offense but you are sounding like a cop..." pointed out Lance,I remained extremely in my composure,never thought of denying it,I chuckled and they chuckled with.

" Now,hang on,Lance,I gotta say this. I only smoke Cubans on my birthday,every New Year after 1 am and each year on October 10th. Right now,because of the raid,I might die so this is just an exception to the rules." he said. All of those very days sounded important to him in somehow but I didn't need to ask a lot more.

" Now,that's cool." I applauded.

" Yeah. It's great to know that you are on our side." said Milo.

" There's sides?" I asked.

" Yeah,a lot of sides. You are just seething knowing your ancestral birthright from now on. It's more than just a hobby." said Lance. I took a few more sips,took a seat even as we spoke about life,women and further on. Even had conversations of growing up,by after an hour elapsed,which was also spent on configuring the controls and the interior. This was all needed for me,there was a time where Umi was up the balcony of the hangar and peeped at us,she'd smile over how I fitted in. Given after working and working,the night striked midnight and spells were weaved,explained how to me and so forth. The first night passed,then so did the second,third and fourth nights with progress then Friday morning creeped. The first Friday since I joined this collective that was once mistaken for a cult.

0519 hours

I was passed out cold,had glimpses of the very dream I had the night I traveled to the Dark Side Of The Moon. It was clearer now,very cosmic too. I was amongst a crowd of a very ancient civilization,not older than the Mayans perhaps. I wore my classic attire of a white shirt,black jacket,along with black pants and shoes that would match. The dream was finally saying something. All I know is that my soul felt hostile and my mind deranged. I kept progressing through the crowd of people,they all started to stare at me then they all tried to grapple me. My body in the real world remained still. I was being tried to be pulled apart,they were chanting,angry at my presence,I started to swing at them at somehow,they dodged,then - they would continue on. I cried for help,then I saw a throne just a few feet that levivated about a feet from the ground. The being that encountered Aquilla and I encountered. I was traumatised,it sat there,staring me down from the distance,I used my elbows to strike the ones whom kept trying to hurt me. After striking five and another two,they stopped and made way for me to walk directly to the being that sat on the throne. I walked slowly towards it without worrying then when I was at the front of the crowd,it stood tall.

" Milo!" screamed Hannah then I snapped out of the dream. I was beat.

" Huh?" I said in a weak voice while I faced the ceiling,my vision was restored and I could see Hannah looking down at me,I rubbed my eyes and started to stand up.

" You okay?" she asked.

" Yeah,yeah. Just need to freshen up. But I'm fine." I said. She nodded and recalled a condition of mine.

" You need to go today to Knights Run since it's Friday." she simply said.

" Yeah,I need to see Aquilla,see a few folks then return here." I clarified.

" Whoa,wait...you aren't going to your home too?" she asked worried.

" No,that's just a bed to me now." I said easily.

" Xavier,you gotta try to fix things with your parents." she advised.

" You know,Hannah. You sound just like my therapist,only you aren't." I said harshly.

" Okay,I get it. I won't impose but I'll say what I feel like I should speak up on." she said,a little disgusted by how I woke up. I took some time to breathe first.

" Perhaps you are right. I need to fix this. I will,not now. But I will. This,for now,is the only life I'll live." I said and walked away and ascended the flight of stairs in the hangar. She had to say more thing.

" Xavier,you are a really kid..." she complicated openly. I turned to her and had to accept it.

" Thank you,Hannah. See you after my trip."

Knights Run
1000 hours

Milo and Lance donned the Cruiser 47 to send me to my hometown. I was still conversing with them about my home town along the way. They both listened attentively,had questions and made bets about my town and certain outcomes regarding the raid as well. By,Giant Stub is where the Cruiser was landed,I only had my backpack and the issued backpack.

" I tell you,adjusting isn't so difficult for me. Made friends and I'm about to help change the world." I pointed out.

" Yeah,you also have a blonde girl who has a crush on you." blantly said Milo.

" Wait,you mean that..." I slowly said

" Yes,Hannah is your Wizardry girlfriend." interrupted Lance. I was baffled.

" Whoa,but she didn't say anything. I mean,I just don't believe that a beautiful girl like her,I mean,she's amazing..." I said.

" She's obnoxious,she's worse than Monday and broken aglets." said Milo.

" Okay,that's mean,cool but what the heck is an aglet?" I asked.

" It's the metal or plastic tube fixed round each end of a shoelace." he defined.

" You sounded like a dictionary for a word we seriously don't care about." said Lance,I giggled at this joke.

" Look,Romeo,we can prove this the moment you get home tonight. She,she knits jumpers for the guy she is falling for. Always stitches the letter of the first name and a small heart next to it. We can raid the room to find it." said Lance.

" Or we could just ask her." I said. Without a word they went back to the Cruiser.

" What,what is it?" I asked.

" Your jokes aren't funny." they said at once and left. Now,finally,I was back home and walked to the Precinct to submit the footage thus far.

Knights Run Precinct
1025 hours

When I walked into the doors of the Precinct,everyone kept quiet. I felt like I were an 1800 outlaw that walked into a saloon. I believed that this was all perhaps because I'd have a varied pigment,a mutation perhaps then I'd check for what could have caused the attention I grasped. It wasn't odour nor appeal,I looked at the clock,perhaps there was somewhat a difference in the environment yet no...they were all staring at me,even the shocked receptionist. I decided to march down to Cunningham's office for answers. I barged into his office while he was on the phone.

" Uh huh...yeah...I hear you,Christina,and yes,this is important...uh huh...yeah. Look,the house will be ready on time." he said over the phone. I began to wonder whom it might be,I gladly took a seat,placed the footage on his desk and awaited to be debriefed by him regarding the way forward and so forth.

" Okay,I love you too. Bye for now." he said then hung up the phone. I had to ask.

" Who was that?" I asked softly.

" That's my wife,Christina. She is staying at my mom's for a while. I need to ready the house for someone." he said.

" Alright,I see. By the way,why is everyone at the Precinct is look at me like I killed a litter of kittens and made a scarf out of them?" I asked.

" It's more like they are acting like Neanderthals that see you as the first fire,Green. They are astonished,everybody knows about your involvement into bringing down the sorcery syndicate." he explained.

" Whoa,whoa...define everyone." I said in needing to be warned.

" Everyone in the precinct know,I think I'll blame the janitor." he said.

" Now that's not what I need. I have earned their fear,not respect." I complained.

" The outside world is leaning on rumors for now and you are one of the most talked out and worshipped person right now." he warned.

" Crap,all I wanted to do was help and now I need to adjust my life because of all of this attention." I said to him.

" The good news is that they don't know about your hocus pocus gene,only me and perhaps your pastor and girlfriend do..." he said.

" Oh,shit,Aquilla!" I said in panic and slapped my palm onto my forehead.

" Yeah,you are in trouble. Tell her the truth before the press conference this afternoon at 5 pm." he said.

" And the footage?" I asked frantically.

" I'll duplicate it then bring you back all of the items so that you can capture enough for them to be incarcerated or hanged. Xavier,please they can and will be something of that magnitude." he said. It was time to tell him about the raid to find the Cradle.

" Okay,here it is. In a few days,the collective is planning on stealing a Cradle from the world's most secure building without warning. It's risky,it's all corrupt. This could send them straight to Hell for it. I need to take part and help them,only to tip off their base after and we could all end this." I said.

" It's great and I know I'd pitch the raid to a network after everything dusts away but it's too risky,it's just something that could get YOU...dead." he pointed.

" Detective,I get it. I could die. I could just manage to capture everything...and die. It could be a stray bullet,it could even be one of the very wizards I infiltrated that end my life but with all due respect,this is what this pact had to lead to. I'm afraid of dying but I should be giving a chance to try. Try and finish all of this. This could be the only time to do right with myself and this town. So,with or without your blessings,I'm going to see my girlfriend,I'm going to talk to my town,go back to the Dark Side,record everything that is malicious. Bring back world peace perhaps,get my education and live on..." I said humbly to him. This philosophy was ushered in by the dreams I kept having,I began to finally understand that the civilization is in fact modern society and whomever sat on the throne is yet to be placed in theory. Cunningham was beyondly impressed,he said nothing,rested on his chair. His desk had an image of Christina,saw it then knew I had to end Crimson's tirade of destruction.

" Alright,I'm with you but we are going to do things a lot more different from now on." he said in agreement. I decided to listen to his new terms that will probably keep me alive for the mission at hand.

" Okay,I'm listening,Detective..." I said.

" Firstly,you are going to need a much more bigger Backpack Backup,even in a new haircut." he said. Out of humor,I stopped and waited a moment.

" Yeah,you know. The new bag will do..." I pointed out.

1137 hours
Everson River,Knights Run

After the grueling and insightful new terms and gizmos that were all militaristic and handpicked by an unknown person at the time,the very person is Cunningham's tip-off - I ran over to find and meet up with Aquilla. Talk,explain the truth and let her understand everything. I was still contemplating whether I should mention the spells and so forth. Along the way,three people attempted to call me. My father,Otto and Eva - by accident,I missed all three calls. My mind was trying to see the concrete as either worth it or it was all just exxagerated,who was the name of the tip-off that Cunningham blindly relied on and my sponsor for my tuition fees,why the suddenness. Would I be called a traitor more than a hero? All of that was floating around in my mind with it only leading to more questions. Questions that could only be answered only if there was a future for this society. By the time I was near to the place where I was meant to rendezvous - I needed to suspend the negativity and firmly decide which side to tell from my already complex story. I took steps closer and closer to her without being seen. The banks of the river were

chartered with benches for those who'd visit it at the night. Aquilla was in the mood of admiring the scenery of the waters that flowed peacefully. I took a few more steps, out of the shades, she felt I was here.

"Xavier..." she called out.

"Uh huh..." I sheepishly replied.

"Had to help the cops, huh..." she said.

"Yeah, I can explain everything." I said slowly and calmly to her. She stood up and walked directly to me. She looked at me dead in the eyes.

"Okay, maybe it'd be easier for me to do that if you didn't have so much anger in one look. Split it up to a sequence, maybe? Okay, can we just regard this time as a very amusing yet dangerous phase of our lives then laugh?" I said, trying to make her lighter to break down the expression she had in her face. Nothing worked.

"Do you want to live for another 15 years?" she asked in a serious tone.

"It'd depend what I'd be living for." I answered.

"So what we might build together isn't reason enough?" she asked.

"No, sadly because maybe those are your reasons. You see me as what the world sees me as - just troubled, without hope, without a stable future." I said.

"That's unfair, you clearly, clearly don't know what I see in you, what my mind has to say about you." she said, growing more and more emotional.

"Well, tell me then, Aquilla... what do you see in me?" I asked her.

"Only as amazing as your consciousness, your mind, your ideas and - I see your soul, your soul is... everything. Whenever I used to give up on the world, cry and think 'No human cares enough', I'd hope a soul like you exists... and that's why, I'm falling for you, you and every flaw too... and a while from now, you could get seriously hurt." she said painfully.

"Wait, you are falling? For me?" I said.

"Yes, silly... your entire genome is the reason why. Your habits, your skew fashion sense..." she said a lot my cheerful banter, I knew that I needed to take an advice given to the Green family. While she kept talking, I kissed her, it was warm, it seemed to have repaired the pain and slid down the argument into rubble. I stopped and I said a few things.

"I get it, it's me we are talking about. Just know that it's mutual. I'm days away from doing something for the world, it's dangerous, it's reluctant but it's needed to be done. When I get home, it'll be just you and my writing. No hocus pocus, no cops." I said to her and embraced her.

"Wait... hocus pocus?" she said.

"Yeah, you wouldn't believe it if I told you, I'd also have to kill you if I did." I joked, she laughed, her tears made a stain on my shirt but she laughed, that sight and sound meant everything to me.

"This feels surreal for me..." I said.

"You never thought I'd argue with you then you'd ricochet it all into a sweet gesture where you could wind up either dead or filthy rich?" she asked me, looking for an answer.

"No, I never thought I'd ever win a girl like you while I'm still chasing my dreams..." I replied.

"You don't have to do everything alone, Xavier, not anymore." she said.

"Yeah, I guess you are right." I said. The advice and comfort Umi gave me was what makes my story be what it is today. Why not make allies with the very people of the union of wizards? It was time perhaps to gain the team I could be honest with. I rounded up my idea into creating an anarchy with Dominic, Milo and Hannah without Cunningham's knowledge.

1510 hours

Dr Moore's Office

After spending time with Aquilla, I needed to see Eva for perhaps my last possible time.

"You seem to have fallen completely in love with her, how is it that you let that happen?" she asked me kindly. I was staring outside, seeing a mesmerizing view of the city.

"It's called fate I guess. Everything seems to be alright." I said.

"You know, you are obviously content now. Yet one more hurdle remains..." she said.

"Yeah, it's something not even my psychologist can't know of." I replied.

"Isn't it very dangerous?" she said.

"It doesn't matter if the rewards mean more." I said.

"Well, I completely have faith in your bravery. We can call it a day for now..." she said.

"Whoa, wait - just like that?" I said.

" Yes,Xavier,you need to gain a level headed state of mind,we'll talk again after you manage with what you are partaking in." she said.

" Thank you..." I sincerely said.

" Just don't die...something that needs to be said." she advised. The rest of the time was fruitful,very fruitful and I had to leave at around the 23rd hour again. Back to the place that will experience my treachery.

Bremagh's Empire,25 000 kilometres away from Earth
0347 hours

Whilst I picked up the toils of what would be my most frightening week yet - I was being talked about elsewhere. The being that Aquilla and I encountered had a name - Bremagh and he was an ancient being whom has sufficed in great power. He relied on humans and wizards to keep his empire alive,there was harmony in the empire which was merely a floating fortress which was incredibly vast that you would easily get lost by going astray from a tour guide. He sat on his throne,without woes,without worrying,awaiting to deploy a task to a young apprentice - Wes Parker himself. The whereabouts of Wes Parker were shifting as he was making his way to the throne room while walking and speaking to Maya,the lady whom he was preparing to marry in the following months. Being taken under Bremagh's wing and also choosing to marry Maya was what caused the disappearance of Wes Parker initially and he seemed in a blissful time of his life. They were discussing the simplicity of the rituals of marriage and how mesmerizing it was. After losing his father at a young age,Wes was raised by his mother,Catherine alone and she was relocated to the empire as agreed to by Bremagh himself when he first inducted Wes into the humdrum life of the ancient structure.

" We are finally getting married this November..." said Wes to Maya.

" It's a perfect story to tell our children when they grow up." she replied.

" Well,yes. I mean,it's going to be held in the world's most ancient kingdom so...we are allowed to brag,we can even add some stories to it,about how you once didn't sleep for 75 hours..." he said,listing all of the zany and incredibly hysterical times they shared with where perilous and meaningful prior to him proposing to her. She was laughing completely. They reached the door that led to the throne room,they had to part ways for Wes to be debriefed then sent out again.

" I love you,Maya..." he said to her.

" And I love you too,Wes..." she said sincerely. He placed his right foot into the room,he looked over,waved at her as she moved along the hallways. Bremagh could finally speak to him as Wes stood in the center of the room with the throne being a vast distance apart from the placement of where Wes Parker stood. He had to greet.

" Greetings King Brenagh. I'm here to be assigned my mission." said Wes.

" Bring back my son." he simply said. Wes understood firmly.

" And the Cradle?" he simply asked seeing now he'd go after the collective right after.

" Your human ally Cunningham cannot be trusted with its power. Call upon its keeper to conceal it a new home." he simply answered. There was mutual respect between Wes and Bremagh,nothing else was not needed to be said.

" I shall,King Bremagh." he agreed and stepped out of the room and proceeded to helm his principle weapon. A weapon that neither I nor the others can even be prepped for.

Dark Side Of The Moon
1000 hours

The Wednesday before the week where we risk our lives,we had to showcase our best spells possible - all of us. I was the last person to showcase,granted,I arrived last to the Training Zone. I walked in,readied and amped for the trial.

" Finally,you made it..." commented Lance.

" Sorry everyone,I lost track of time..." I said. Hannah seemed a little jealous,thinking I was on the phone call with Aquilla.

" Oh,it's Aquilla you called?" she asked bitterly.

" Yeah,the network here is great." I said.

" Oh,um,well,does she know about all of this? We could wind up in the news for this!" she warned,the volume of her made me wonder if Lance and Milo was correct yet she still cared.

" No one will see us. This is a sweep. We enter the building,knock out guards. Get the Cradle. Leave. Simple as that." said Lucias in his assertive and commanding voice.

" Well,what about the escape route? Isn't it a little messy?" asked Umi.

" And the certain,other uncontrolled variables as well..." asked Dominic.

" Name one,Dominic." challenged Milo.

" A secret weapon they have to protect the Cradle. Past injuries get woken up. Don't get me started on the rumors of an Energy wizard lurking and those sort of people can easily stop us if we become disorganized." he said.

" So what? We aren't a few mercenaries with guns. We don't have a legion of guards or fans yet,there's an imbalance we need to restore. The means,no matter how dangerous they are,are possible. Just free your minds and everything will follow." he advised,ending all the doubts we have. Everyone agreed with how positive Lucias was with the plan of attack. Everyone except me.

" I have a better plan,it will work and we already have all the tools to go with it." I bravely.

" Whoa,whoa,Xavier." said Hannah in panic.

" Just listen to it first." I pleaded. They all exchanged looks,wondering,aside from Lucias,whom else would oppose to hearing my ideal plan of attack. I was given the right to proceed.

" Alright,we are listening..." said Lance. I began explaining my plan,it was familiar to my memory because I remember plotting such a heist five years before,whilst I was still just an average 15-year-old teenage boy navigating in the streets of Knights Run. After careful deliberation,answering a few questions - my plan was the progression of the raid for the Cradle. Now,to prepare for the heist,we needed 3 days yet we decided to work around the clock to complete the preparation within 50 hours - and we did. Decades ago,the Cradle was extorted and at that time,nested in the most secure building in the 21st Century world. Miraculously,I gained the hocus pocus adjustment and I most importantly,I had their trust and respect.

Chapter 6 - The Raid on 3rd Avenue

1947 hours

I was debriefed about the place that held the Cradle of Gexir, very narrowed down my options of how to go about finally bringing down this syndicate and it had to happen in a day. It's key principle was to consider killing Lucias first in an isolated incident, convince a one or two of the wizards to align themselves with me then managing the remaining allies of the deceased Lucias if successful. It was about time. I decided to go into the mission carrying the upgraded Backpack Backup and finally end this during the raid.

" I hope I don't die tomorrow..." I peacefully said to myself and called it an early night. I shut my eyes, images flashed in front of me, so many ,recalling old memories even then began another dream that was a lot less violent. I saw myself walking amongst a crowd of the very people,with the very same attire as before. There were little children running around too. It was an immense celebration,the very room's architecture and ceilings were beyond amazing - there were mesmerizing then I saw the large table that sat the ones of nobility. I was still to view who sat down then someone spoke to me.

" Xavier,go take a seat..." said a female voice,it was Eva,she wore in the same clothes.

" Whoa,wait,Eva?!" I asked in confusion.

" I'm sorry I'm late but I have scrolls you needed to read..." apologized Otto whom stepped out from the crowd and placed about 10 scrolls into my arms.

" Otto?!" I shouted. I got bumped into and it all felt real,I could even conjure a Seal yet I never used sorcery.

" Okay,okay,Xavier. Relax,this is worse than when you got your fifth concussion. Look,we need to mingle,see you later..." said Otto as they bid farewell. I was strongly worried of what transpired then I saw someone familiar and when directly to her.

" Finally...you made it..." she said. I sat down next to her.

" Aquilla,what is,what is all of this?" I asked. She giggled and collected herself.

" This is all a premonition of what will finally happen..." she said,those words set off a shrill and I was triggered into waking up.

0342 hours

With about seven more hours remaining before going after Gexir's prized possession,I felt needed to train further,install all of the miniature cameras that were concealed by the attire that I wore for the raid,in actuality I had to be armed with firearms and even a dagger if need be. I also needed to remain calm,have hope in within a higher power despite the crafts I was practicing questioned God's very existance. I was more than prepared to go into the war. I was finally a lot more even ahead of time for once to the proceedings that I even had to time to pen my journal.

0710 hours

When they walked down to the kitchen,I had already eaten,rinsed my dish then sat by the hangar and awaited them. Umi thought I overslept,she even went to my room to check if I were even sleeping yet I was not there. She finally caught me swinging my feet,sitting on the balcony. I looked over to her and just showed a wince.

" Xavier's here." she shouted.

" Oh,shit. We have to carry on with his plan..." jokingly complained Milo. I stepped to the platform then started using the stairs to walk down to the Cruiser 47. I only had a few words to say.

" Let's finally bring our cause to the world." I said in believe of my plan.

Purgatory International

Frankfurt,Germany

1000 hours

The Cruiser 47 flew to the richest city in Europe in the time - Frankfurt, Germany. This was also the birthplace of the very elusive Milo Washington. The city was home to over 700 000 inhabitants and it was home to Purgatory International, the frontrunner at the world's most powerful advances and it had its clutches on Gexir's Cradle for many years now, experimenting on it. We were still in high altitude before my plan could commence, running over what's meant to happen now.

" It's just 3 am in Knights Run, seems like we can make the morning news." I commented whilst looking at my watch. The Cruiser 47 simply hovered hundreds of feet in the German skies. Understanding what would happen next, I need to divulge that Hannah was a Ventriloquist wizard, she had spells that could rattle you. We all stood in the Cruiser 47, getting ready. My plan was beyond dangerous and yet it concurred to wizard only opening the doors into the heist and must be used moderately to carry everything through. Prior to the heist, Milo did some reflecting on his life, the trip to Frankfurt brought him into an emotional state and he remembered a young lady that means dear to him.

" Milo? You okay?" asked Hannah whilst Milo looked at Frankfurt through the window.

" Yeah, I'm just finally back home." he said to Hannah. All our weapons were active and now it was finally time. I kept thinking of that one simple dream then Cunningham called me I took the call in private.

" Yeah, talk to me..." I said.

" I got the name of who got you suspended." he finally said.

" I'll get it when I'm done with what I'm doing at Frankfurt." I said.

" Alright, don't die. Make your city proud." he said, wishing me well.

" Thank you..." I said and the call was ended. I just gave everyone a nod. Whilst the people of Frankfurt set their eyes on the presence of the Cruiser, they were fascinated, took images of it and footage. I opened the hatch door and I was viewing the ground from the edge of the door. I carried a backpack and had possession of guns, I did not need to be violent yet my years before allowed me to agree to go into a dark place where violence was the catalyst of solving certain problems. Before I leaped off, I recalled the first time I ever held a gun, the time I was in fact still a pure soul, about 5 years old. Yet I never had the residing conflicts to even kill a person, even with the saddening phase in my life. I took a deep breath.

" Wait, which spell are you gonna use to get to the building?" asked Umi.

" I'm not using a spell..." I said. I took a few steps to create runway. Sprinted then leaped off the Cruiser then fell. Gravity pulled me towards Earth. People gasped, even the team.

" Shit!" cursed Milo.

" That's crazy!" shouted Hannah. As I descended, an ancient force awakened. I had to trust the fall, I was not afraid of what could or could not happen. I wasn't even remembering any of the pages from Maxima, I recalled only the subliminal dreams I had of this very vast civilization, I clicked into the crowd, I was one of them somehow. I opened my eyes to the world, it was the very moment I reimagined the entire structure of wizardry - I knew everything. I swirled once and began to fly right into Frankfurt. Without wings. Without spells. Without explanation. No one could believe what I managed to do. The inhabitants were not panicking, instead they pointed to the sky, towards me. I began navigating, flying across buildings, swirling in the realm above. This all drew news crews to respond by finding my current location and question whom I was. I knew that Purgatory International was only a few minutes apart, I finally emerged into the view of their building. Speeding to one of their mirrored entrance on the highest floors I conjured an Elemental beam that I was not ready to use it to begin the assault.

" Milo..." I said in the radio transmission. He was still in shock.

" How are you, what...Xavier, you are flying..." he said.

" Yeah..." I said. Now I was only a minute away until impact.

" It's time to show them what we can do." I said then fired the beam at them, blasting open a side in their building. Causing it to tremble and the carnage fell to the ground.

" That's the signal." noted Dominic. Hannah began conjuring two spells from the Cruiser while I swooped into the building, slid across the room, throwing jabs, flicking around knives and subduing the security in that level. I used a mild attack in the form of a Wind-type spell to take care of about 3 armed guards.

" Okay, I cleared my level, this gets dangerous from here..." I said. Umi drank a vile then jumped off the Cruiser along with Milo. Umi temporarily had indestructability whilst Milo needed to dive into the river in Walsburg to teleport a key object of the plan where it is needed. Hannah's seal was uprooting trees from the ground that began forming a gigantic arm. While falling, Milo used a teleportation spell on Umi and she was sent to a specified place within the city.

" Umi is planted." reported Milo.

" Let's head to the Cradle." ordered Lucias. The Cruiser was now being steered to Purgatory's whereabouts. I was seething the owner of the entire establishment, going through floors and floors of the place. I took jabs and I sent more myself, one guard threw me over a desk.

" Yeah, finding the Head Honcho isn't easy my side." I said to them. Milo plummeted into the water, swam to the surface. Began conjuring a spell. In the streets of Frankfurt, Umi appeared and leaped into the reception of the building. The gigantic arm finished forming, there was frightful chatters in the city as people began to run away for their lives.

" Okay, let's set everything off. In 3." said Lucias.

" No, wait, it's too soon." I shouted while I kept fighting and winded up wounding using bullets.

" Too soon? Xavier, Milo already submerged underwater and he has like a minute then he starts to suffocate." acknowledged Hannah.

" I know. I know. But I need to find the CEO still, no sign of him..." I said.

" Even now? This is not going to end well..." said Lance as he sped to the warzone. Umi handled the entire escapade easily. Didn't even have to worry as much until there was a grenade introduced into the fight. One the armed guards tossed it at her, she took a piece of plank then struck the grenade out of the building and it crashed into the streets.

" Civilians in trouble!" shouted Umi, they shoot her with the moment of absence, she was just hurled away to the wall and collapsed to the floor. The grenade went off, its detonation shook the ground and had enough energy to launch a school bus filled with young children into the air and endangering their lives. They were buckled up except for one child, he was just a young boy, the bus began falling, with the front side of the vehicle facing the cold pavements. Hannah saw this unfold then controlled the gigantic hand to suspend the school bus from falling and gently place it down. When she managed to grasp the vehicle, it was safe yet the young boy fell and went through the front window. She then sent out a root to quickly react to the fall, wrap around his waist then save him too. Then it was all well again, a few casualties from a few people below but the young ones were safe.

" That's impressive." complimented Dominic.

" Thank you, I just had to make it on time this time." replied Hannah.

" Something isn't right, there's another wizard here." sensed Lucias.

" This is Xavier, they got Umi. Milo, you can conjure your spell now." I instructed. Milo was still able to hold his breath this entire time. Milo began conjuring a spell he named "Chronicle's Way". The spell emitted light from the abyss and into the skies, the spell was finally activated. I followed the trail of the guards that captured and were sending Umi to Bernard Bronze - the co-founder and CEO of Purgatory International. I was not seen at all by the guards, kept stealth and distance. Hid the corner of the hallway which led to Bronze's office. Respectfully, the guards rushed into through Bronze's sanctified place.

" Sir, we captured one of the mercenaries, she's wounded." reported Nelson Levinski, one of the armed guards. Bernard was too concentrated on the current situation of how our craft was at bay, helped the children be safely placed on to the pavement. Bronze had a powerful device with him, it's his watch, it can slow down and even halt time. Bronze was wealthy, not corrupt however.

" I know that they are after the Cradle..." said Bronze. I moved closer to the door.

" Yes, we know but it's secured and the only way to gain access to the room is your involvement." said Nelson. Umi was too hurt to focus, the impact of the wall earlier is what made her disorientated.

" I need Umi alive..." instructed Bronze. She lifted her chin, looked to Bronze.

" You know whom we all are?" she asked in a fading voice.

" Yes, I know. I know about the Dark Side Of The Moon, I know about this foolish attempt to try and steal the Holy Grail of modern world. I know everything..." he said. Bronze however was practicing narcissism, an annoying trait but not corrupt.

" This is all great, nice plan so far, you just have a morality problem and I decided to send edited footage of all your wrongdoings to a television network. You know, the one with a spineless CEO and with journalists with an inferior complex that need this sort of story." he threatened. I finally timed myself.

" 1. 2. 3." I whispered to myself. I busted into the office, wrangled my gun and used wind-type spells to cast away Levinski's unit away from Umi. Bernard clicked his watch, time slowed down and he leaped across his desk, ran to be then threw a jab. The watch didn't affect me, I saw the attack and dodged the attack and kneed his gut. Kicked him right to the jaw and he fell to the ground. Umi sat down, resting on the chair. Levinski, Bronze and the other guards were beaten up, on the floor.

" Yeah, you know everything - except me." I confidently said. They were all groaning and in pain. Bronze had a few words to say.

" You. You are a ninja." he tried commenting whilst having trouble to breathe.

" What?" I asked while I was baffled.

" He's trying to insult you..." clarified Umi.

" Insult me? He called me a ninja!" I said in excitement.

" Xavier, what's happening? Chronicle's Way is ready, Milo submerged and is already running there." reported Lucias.

" You can place the Cruiser down at the park, we got Bronze." I said.

" Are we not going to kill Bronze? I mean, I got water in my lungs from his delay tactics." commented Milo.

" Whoa, wait, kill?" asked Hannah.

" Well, since flunking my 7th Grade spelling bee competition and never asking Becky Morris from the next street for the dance - I've been dead inside..." commented Bernard.

" How did you get the watch?" I asked.

" A gift from the idols. You know, I have my wife and children to think about here. Take the Cradle, we'll hire the Alchemy 4 to hunt you down then it is all Murphy's law." said Bernard. All of this was familiar to me. The watch was from a trophy room, the symbols were from the exact civilization I saw in my dreams.

" We are landing the Cruiser, taking the elevator to the office. Keep the guards down." commanded Lucias.

" Already done." I said.

Parked simply on the front of the dilapidating building was the Cruiser and the remaining members walked out and took the lift to gain custody of Bronze. The CEO was complaining, he was a man of many words. Hateful words now. He had the right reasons to.

" You know, when you die...I won't cry." he said towards Umi and I.

" Yet you didn't cry when people died because of you..." I pointed out.

" That was all, well, how do I say this? We weren't gods." he said.

" That's a very short press release..." I commented. The lift doors open. There was a smug Lucias, a shell-shocked Hannah whom was drawing back old memories, Milo still wearing his damped clothes and a heavily armed Dominic. Now I had to recall my orders as soon as we were close to the Cradle. I needed to use tactics, pure ingenious tactics. I cannot be prepared to fight Lucias so I literally had to backstab him. The moment that occurs, I have to then use a concoction that I brewed to deal with the remaining troublesome with the help of firearms.

" Great plan, Xavier. It has its flaws but it worked out well." commented Lucias.

" Whoa, wait! You planned all of this?" questioned Bronze.

" Yeah, it's all of my planning." I gratefully said. The planned had certain troubles since I took time to infiltrate the headquarters and Umi sustained an injury which ruled her out for now.

" I should hire you to script my security plans...." replied Bronze.

" Billionaire are weird..." said Umi.

" Alright, now we need the Cradle then we can finally use Chronicle's Way." I said. Basically, the entire plan I worked with had to completely rely on the canisters I had and I needed to film everything unfold.

" Umi, I need to send you into the Cruiser, you need to get that wound attended to." said a conscious Milo. He finally had a heart, his own heart. I was entirely feeling guilty of betraying the collective in that moment. I reminded myself of the amount of funds and prestige so I quickly forgot about it. In the real world, I was laughing. They all stared at me. I had to think of a consistent joke, nothing less funnier than the last comic moments I had.

" Do you think the pressure got to him finally?" asked Lance.

" Yeah, I mean, he's meant to. He almost could have gotten us all killed." said Milo.

" I'm sorry, just remembered a joke." I said.

" Oh, cool, tell us the joke." said Hannah enthusiastically.

" I can't now. I will, some other day. I mean, I don't want to intrude when Lucias has to delegate on who is meant to delegate on who is going to enter the vault with." I said, trying to diverge from why I was laughing.

" Every one of us wizards will be going into the vault aside from Umi, Milo will send her to the Cruiser using a spell. We will be going with Bronze as a hostage." delegated Lucias. I now knew how I was placing my life in peril. I was shocked but I had to nod and agree completely.

" Alright, it seems really cool. Crowded idea just for the easy part of the plan. But I mean, still, I can't say the joke though for now. First the Cradle then my joke." I said.

" Okay, now, Bronze - lead us to where we need to go." said Milo.

" Kill me. I'm not going to let you take the Cradle." said Bronze.

" Look, you are done for. Insurance will probably cover all of this but we will gain access to it somehow..." notified Lance.

" My death will not be in vain still." replied Bronze then he had a smirk on his face. Lucias began to conjure his spell which was guaranteed will kill Bronze. Bronze bluffed while Lucas actually aimed the Seal at him.
" That's my cue then. I hope you die knowing that the life you lived will be remembered..." he said. The beam lit up. About a few seconds left to kill Bronze,the CEO spoke.
" Then again,maybe letting you all take has a green side to it. I mean,I know when I'm defeated." he said. Bronze had faith in something,I could sense was beyond powerful than any of us. Lucias decided not kill him anymore.
" Alright then,the Cradle. It's time we have it." demanded Hannah.
" Let's take a walk,people." he said.

1025 hours

Milo teleported Umi into the Cruiser 47 then returned in time for all of us to take the elevator to the floor where Gexir's Cradle was placed. I received a call from Aquilla. I looked at it wondering what were to happen while we were on the elevator to the lair. I stared at it.
" Aren't you going to answer that?" asked Hannah.
" Well, nope. We are in a middle of an event that will probably change the world for the better, my girl can wait." I said. Milo took it then answered it for me.
" Hey, Aquilla..." said Milo.
" Oh, who is this?" asked a baffled Aquilla."
" What are you doing, Milo?!" I shouted.
" Xavier?! Is that you?" asked Aquilla when she heard me over in the background.
" Give me that..." said Hannah and took it from Milo. There was chatter,fun chatter amongst us.
" Put it on loudspeaker." advised Dominic.
" Whoa,wait,Aquilla called me." I said.
" Yeah,we know." said a chatteting Milo. Hannah placed it on speaker,letting all of us hear and speak to her.
" Okay...I guess you all can hear me now." she said.
" Loud and clear." verified Lucias. He was enthrottled by her voice.
" Alright,Xavier - where are you?" she asked,I wanted to lie but I couldn't,I wish I should have lied.
" I'm at-" I tried saying then she actually had to leave.
" We'll talk tomorrow, my mum needs me now."
" No, wait, I'll call. Tonight. I promise."
" You don't have to be obligated to."
" Don't worry, this is something I want to do..." I said.
" Thank you..." she said. Hung up the phone then I placed it in my pocket. Exhaled.
" We are here..." announced Bronze. The lift doors opened and we saw the floor that had the most advance means of war ever. We were gleaming when we saw it for the first time.

25 Columbus Road

Just moments after concluding the botched call, which could have been a hiccup yet we knew that time will allows us to speak in proper terms - there was a moment she had with her mother. Walking into her room with a smile on her face.
" Mum..." she greeted warmly.
" My little Aquilla." she greeted back in the same gesture. She sat right beside her in what seemed like quiet early hours.
" I can't sleep,been having those nightmares again." explained Aquilla. It brought to light that Aquilla's mother was gravely sick and somehow, there was a cure concorted,it mysteriously was left in the front door of their residents with the note written a familiar note.

" Use once and your mother will live past the illness. Signed, Maxim."

The handwriting was terrible in reference to spacing, it seemed it was written just by the door. Yet it worked,Aquilla suffered from the same dreams I had,hers were worse. She saw me dying and the whole world bowing at a God-like figure,it was all suspended in time and she witnessed it all.

" You shouldn't be afraid,he'll be fine. Everything works out for the best. A few days ago,this was my deathbed yet now - I'm alive and well." she said.

" I know,just seeing all of that made me realize how I need to see him to be kept alive,to be free." she said.

" Xavier?" she asked.

" I think there's more to what he has been dealing with,all of the secrecy,the alliance with the police and of course,the night we saw that,that Goliath." she said.

" Why not ask him to return home,quit all of the things that are revolving. I mean,next thing,he can wind up in the news." she advised.

" Xavier is in the news..." said Bertram walking into the room.

" Whoa,whoa,Dad,you aren't serious,right?!" questioned a frantic Aquilla.

" Is he okay?" asked a worried Allegra.

" Yeah,but well,Frankfurt isn't." he pointed out whilst going to the advanced television and verbally activating the channel. They had the most advanced electronics and gadgets all funded by Friday Pharmaceuticals.

" What would Frankfurt not be okay?" asked Aquilla. The channel was switched to,the visuals of our heist appeared.

" That's why..." said Bertram. Bronze sent the footage of our breaking and events that transpired,the story was that we were mercenaries that made a target out of Purgatory International with the objective of causing harm to the personnel and the executives. A new problem was now occurring - the city of Frankfurt gathered near the building,news crews flooded to near the establishment and my name and the rest of the others names also appeared on the screen,there even was the film that saw me fly into the building and start shooting at the guards. The modern world finally met wizards...

Purgatory International
1049 hours

Trying to decode the safety measures for access to the Cradle,Bronze had conversations to say.

" You know,this is still theft." he said to us.

" Yeah,but you got to admit,the whole plan - it's impressive..." noted Hannah.

" You keep complimenting him,why the Hell do you keep doing that?" questioned Bronze. I was standing alone in the room whilst Lance and Milo had a conversation about the Cruiser. Dominic was on a call and Lucias was admiring the entire floor. In reference to all of that,neither of us could hear the conversation.

" It's a little complicated..." she said.

" Nothing's ever complicated." he replied.

" Then again,I'm not going to give out a life lesson to one of the people whom are stealing away from me." he said then briefly stopped working on deciphering.

" Think of it all as an investment..." yelled Lucias whom was walking towards Hannah and him.

" Placing it in my custody was an investment. The best move for the sake of humankind." he replied in his defence.

" With all due respect but you abused Gexir's Cradle hence all of the weapons and unrest." said Lucias.

" There has always been a lot of unrest ever since the beginning of time. That all predicates Purgatory International." replied Bernard.

" Still. This world needs order." said Lucias whom was standing along with Bronze and Hannah,we all looked at them.

" This world is better off without you. You are not Bremagh nor his son." he clarified.

" You believe in mythology,Bronze. Besides,I'm the wizard of death..." verified Crimson. Bernard still had a smirk on his face then he continued to decipher the security.

" All I know is,by the end of this - one of us is going to die. Badly." he said then the security systems were completely deactivated. There was a platform that rose from the floor. There was a lot of mechanics placed in motion. It rose from the floor and it was nesting Gexir's Cradle.

" Whoa..." I said. Then someone from behind squeezed my right shoulder,I turned and he grabbed me then tossed me to the wall. There was an imposter. They all looked at that transpired. This person had an ancient armor on that fitted him perfectly onto his body. It was an armor that was powerful. He had a monologue he had to say whilst Lucias and the remaining five got ready to fight back and easily deal with him whilst I still caught my breath and recovered.

" Oh,shit. What the Hell?" questioned Lance whom was weaving a spell.

" I'm fine,I just need to wake up and fight back." I said and Milo teleported me to where they were in the the floor. Bernard knew about this imposter.

" He's pretty cool,right? He tipped me off letting me know how he is at Cradle." said Bronze. I was up and ready to fight back him.

" So he's your clown?" asked Lucias.

" No,he's someone the world needs." answered Bernard. Bronze then would go to the edge of the building.

" Good luck, and Wes - kill them." said Bronze then leaped off the building only to be lifted by an aircraft that was militaristic and named Grit and he held on to be transported,Bronze was played out,exited the entire situation,leaving us to deal with a more destructive obstacle.

" Wait,Wes?" I asked. Lucias and the rest knew whom he was.

" This is Wes Parker..." declared Milo.

" For a future legend, he sure doesn't say much." commented Hannah,Lance laughed then pointed at him mockingly.

" Yeah but now he's not a great wizard..." he joked. Wes did not need to respond,all he knew then was that we won the fight before it began.

" Okay,this is creepy,he just standing there with that very cool armor. Very cool armor but still,he isn't saying a lot. I mean,we don't know if he really is Wes Parker for a fact." said Milo.

" Look,all I say is that we hurt him,get out with the Cradle then sort of let our liason work on the rest." I said.

" Well,we don't have a liason. But the other things,yeah,sure." said Dominic. We all conjured a Seal and carried a weapon,all of this felt like it'd be simple. Just bombard the warrior in the shell with spells and bullets,he'll suffer a concussion,bruises and even lethal wounds then just drop out of the fight. Seems legit,seemed narrative until Hannah said something which validated why we would dismally lose this fight. She stood behind me and noticed something regarding my backpack,the very backpack that was directly handed over by Cunningham.

" Xavier,your backpack has a zipper open..." she said. My body grew cold,wizards can't see through my objects but this armored jerk swiped something.

" Wait,exactly - which zipper is it?" I asked nervously.

" The zipper on your right side. Next to your name to be exact." she said.

" Shit,shit,shit." I cursed.

" Alright,people. Let's defeat the legendary Wes Parker..." announced Lucias. The team started to march to him.

" Wait,everybody,wait!" I said. I said while I stood in my place and started searching through the pocket of the zipper that was open.

" Xavier,what is it now?!" asked a very irritated Milo whom turned around along with the others asking why I was not vouching to attack. I quickly zipped my bag,had it on again then reasoned. Wes Parker took a key weapon from me that was meant to be able to successfully work against Lucias,Milo,Umi,Dominic,Lance and Hannah - a weapon he managed to extract from my back when he attacked me a few seconds before. The footage was safe,not damage and conclusive however Wes finally could defeat us.

" He has a really,really dangerous weapon." I said.

" Okay,so?" asked Lance.

" We fail to understand the point you are trying to make here." said Milo. Wes took out a gun then loaded a canister on it. The gun was ready,they turned to him and were baffled.

" See,he only has one gun..." said Milo. Wes had quick reflexes,he quickly shot the canister right at Dominic,it hit him,exploded,releasing a fume and he was hurled to the floor,hurt and was impaled to the gut with it. The rest of the team ran to Wes then the fight began. Wes ran and intercepted them Lucias tried using a spell to harm him,Wes dodged it then would punch him right in the nose,slid then clashed his knee to the jaw of Lance,loaded a canister shot at Hannah,luckily Milo leaped then used a spell to send the canister to Oblivion before it would even reach Hannah. Time slowed down a little,Wes conjured a spell called "The Third Star" that he tried using on Milo,it was a beam but Milo dodged it. Wes wasn't paying attention to Hannah whom struck the face of his armor using her running elbow. The attack only got Wes on one knee however. Milo began conjure a new spell again,it seemed that Wes was done for.

" Like I said,he only has one gun." reminded Milo. Wes aimed another firearm right at him.

" How is this fair?! Wait,you stood up too fast." complained Milo once again. Wes delivered a punch right to the ribs of Milo Washington and he collapsed on the floor. Wes now had eyes on Gexir's Cradle. I flew over then stood before it.

" You have to go through me to get it." I said then charged at him,he blocked,never fought back. Kept blocking and never fought back. Whilst this all happened,Lucias was conjuring a spell.

" Move!" warned Dominic whom tackled Wes. When this transpired,I knew that the Cradle can be moved to the Cruiser 47.

" Lance,how heavy is the Cradle?" I asked.

" Well,it is too heavy. Very heavy. Look,we would need more than just the two of us." pointed out Lance. Grunting and in managing to stand on both feet,Milo was ready.

" Milo - if you can't touch your nose and sing the National Anthem,we are not going to even think about lifting it..."

I admitted to him. Wes was in a fist fight against Dominic and the tackle was completely just a separation tactic.

Dominic tossed more punches at Wes,this was of course,Wes' tactic. Everyone had tactics. Yet my tactics were betrayal for a good cause. I even began not remembering when I would even turn heel against my very collective.

" When the Hell should I even backstab you all?" I asked myself...it wasn't a whisper or a roar of complaint yet Lance and Milo heard me.

" What did you just say?" asked Milo in a shy tone.

" It's not important." I said. I saw Dominic deliver strike a punch to Wes' gut then try conjuring. His Seal wasn't present - at all. His abilities were suspended.

" Dominic! What's wrong?!" screamed Hannah.

" I,I,I..." he stuttered while Wes regrouped.

" Yeah,use words,not Morse Code." I advised. I talked a lot,it was the jitters. Dominic looked at the fingertips of his hands,he was beyond baffled and even forgot about the fight.

" I can't use my spells..." he said in shock.

Chapter 7 - The Fight on 3rd Avenue

The formula that was handed down to me from Cunningham's allies had the effect of placing a wizard's abilities to a halt and now Wes had canisters of the vile and Dominic's supernatural artillery was phased out in this fight. Lucias' grand spell was ready now. Wes conjured that struck Dominic with a spell and he was hurled right a pillar. Our brute was out of this fight. Wes just nodded to himself. Lucias used his spell, the beam was shot but Wes dodged in time. Lucias tried to again then Wes dodged, again. Hannah fired rounds of ammo right at Wes, the force managed to push him to the edge. Wes sprinted to her as she kept shooting. Lucias aimed and fired the beam at Wes again, the armor allowed him to just smack it away - right towards me and it struck me. I fell out of the building and spiraled down to the Earth.

"Xavier!" called Milo. Wes took strain, tossed a canister of the vile right at Lucias and it struck him too. Hannah stopped shooting at Wes, in order to save me. She activated her Seal and began controlling the hand. It reached out before I could fall onto the concrete floors, people gasped. Back at my hometown, people were in shock. I seemed dead. As the cameras captured those moments for the world to see at that moment. Hannah began panicking...

"I don't sense a pulse in his body..." she said breaking down. Lance jumped off the building then ran on the side of the structure. Lance jumped again to the palm of the giant hand structure where I rested. He was panting, didn't careless. Milo began to collect himself and recall of how all of this meant that he just needed to fight again and not just be a strategist - so he clinched his fists and began walking to Wes with the aim of perhaps even killing him. My backpack was on the streets of Frankfurt, prior to going to the Cradle, I virtually sent the footages to Cunningham moments prior. Rendering my mission complete.

"Yeah, he is no longer with us it seems, I'm going to place him in the Cruiser, I'll try something, Umi's viles could surely do something," said Lance.

"With this fight... I give up," said Hannah. Wes pointed the gun right at her then Milo jumped from above then began fighting him, throwing punches and ricochet a few gun shots. Lance was in the Cruiser with my dying body.

"You can drop the spell, we good," said Lance whom began working on trying to revive me using the medical equipment in the aircraft.

"Alright, I need you to leave now," said Hannah. Lucias was on the corner, sitting on the floor, bruised then heard Hannah's order.

"Whoa, whoa, what? What about Gexir's Cradle?" asked Lance.

"Forget about it, we'll find a way to figure out where to from here but... just save Xavier. Nothing else matters," said Hannah, she would proceed by cutting off all communications from the others. Milo was on a meltdown, fighting and thrashing Wes. This seemed like a one-sided fight despite Wes being a lot fairly advantage. Milo used spells, jabs and firearms all at once. The fight broke walls of the building.

"I am going to kill you," kept saying an enraged Milo. Levinski and the other walked into the room that had the Cradle, armed and Hannah just raised her arms up, in surrender while they arrested her, a responsive Lucias and a beaten Dominic.

"Always remember Murphy's Law..." whispered Nelson right into Hannah's ear while she was being apprehended. The Cradle of Gexir was safe. Lance began flying the Cruiser from ground and it started levitating. Milo was still at war against Wes then Wes executed an uppercut, creating room for him to viciously throw a canister at him, Milo quickly conjured the famous spell that sends objects to Oblivion and the beam caught the canister in time.

"Alright, it's time for Chronicle's Way. I need to end all of this," he said. Chronicle's Way finally activated, now Milo had to telepathically control the water reservoir's every drop. Wes powered up his right gauntlet then took a step then tried to punch him, a frame of water stopped the impact, Milo was not even defensive.

"It is one impressive spell..." openly revealed the reality wizard. Wes took out a dagger and tossed it to him, the water looped it back to him and he just caught it. Wes placed it a way then knew how to stop him.

"You can fight better than that," he taunted Wes. The armor lit up completely then he dashed, ran past the water and swung at Milo, he misses, Milo cringes the right gauntlet. Swirls him around, swipes all of the canisters and kicks him back. The canisters were then thrown out of the window, all of them. When Milo was about to laugh, he was under the influence of a spell that Wes introduced when he charged at him, the Seal couldn't be seen and it was in effect, it showed scorched burns on Milo's clothing. Wes stood up then struck him with the spell "Eleventh Nova" and it halted Milo, rendering him out of the fight. Wes walked to the unconscious wizard and now he had one more part of his plan to complete.

Moments later

The Cruiser 47 took speed, it had high altitudes and Umi attended to my well-being. No vital signs were reflected on the machines, a frantic Lance was the pilot of the aircraft. Umi was healing and was strong enough to even monitor my health, about a few moments, I had vital signs of living. I was never dead yet even there was no pulse sensed but my breathing kept on.

"Xavier isn't dead. He just needs to rest up," reported Umi.

"This guy survived all of that. The spell, the fall," said Lance.

"Yeah but Wes had to ruin everything," complained Umi.

"The weapon that he used to halt our powers was introduced by Xavier, this is something you admitted before we were mopped the floor with," verified Lance.

"Whoa, wait, so Xavier either premeditated that we'd face an opposing wizard or...he would have planned to backstab us at the end," speculated Umi.

"Well, think about it - Xavier concocted the plan, it was dangerous but it worked," pointed out Lance.

"Yet we are now at our lowest phase as a team. This entire fight broke us," said Umi as she stared at my lifeless body.

"I used to think Okinawa was a disaster. This beats it. Now, we need to think of a plan to rescue them."

"I don't see myself rescuing Lucias. He's enraged and all of the limitations were to just hide how much of a monster he is," she argued.

"He freed us," reminded Lance.

"He doesn't know us. We were fine without him."

"Yeah but if you deal with depression - you just have a rope and motivation. That's it. No spells, no missions."

"I disagree. There's more to life than chaos..."

"Name one thing," questioned Lance. There was a thud then footsteps were heard.

"We got company..." said Umi. I opened up my eyes. The moment I saw where I was, remembered what happened. I did not say a single word, I was still trying to regain complete mental awareness. The footsteps stopped.

"Well, that's disappointing. It seems that our enemy isn't going to try to kill us," said Lance.

"Now, we need to deal with Xavier," said Umi. Whilst she introduced how I need to be dealt with even if it were just them - I woke up and stood on my feet.

"You plan to kill me..." I said and Umi turned around to face me. Lance began to worry. I didn't even conjure a spell. I just looked at her.

"Who the Hell are you...really?" she asked seriously. I sighed.

"I am Xavier Green, I conjure spells and I am not a quitter," I simply said.

"You forgot to say that you are a traitor," replied Umi.

"Yeah, I know what I did - I planned to betray my team. It's something that I knew was the right thing to do," I said.

"You reckon what you did would somehow have reason? And what about Wes?" she asked.

"I did not have a hand in what he did," I said, Umi had not felt as if I was telling tales of lies, I was cloaking more of the truth - she wanted me to confess my cause to her. Either how, Lance was awfully silent and now I awaited for them to attack then I would deflect it.

"Xavier, you should be dead by now," she said, implying an explanation for what has transpired, I bluffed.

"Yet I am still alive. Still kicking and still navigating in the depression," I said.

"I won't let the fact that you are going through your own Hell stop me from killing you for betraying us," she viciously said.

"Then try sending me to Hell, try your best. Your level best to try and stop me. What will depress you is how you will fall short from even accomplishing what you decide to do and that's to try and kill me. The system couldn't kill me, the depression couldn't kill me, the circumstance couldn't kill me and I know you won't kill me," I bravely said. Umi decided to process what I just said, it was spoken in light of saying how I didn't escape from depression - I just learned my crafts with it. I shut myself from the world. Isolated, gone. All to be brought back with what would be my betterment. Now, there was a question - a question that Umi eagerly wanted to ask to move forward with things. Issues that were needed to be addressed.

"You know what, I honestly had some thoughts about the daring speech you said - I don't buy it. It's time for you to seriously have a real fight," said an eager Lance. The Cruiser had functions that would allow it to just hover in the sky and those very functions were activated.

"Okay, let's use words," advised Umi.

"We spoke enough already," I commented. Lance left his seat and stepped to the area, stood right next to Umi.

"I just hate bullies," commented Lance.

"I hate murderers. I hate so much but I am not afraid to fight," I said.

" Well,then - it's about time you got a real fight." said Lance. Umi stepped back and finally,I had to have a brawl with the wizard Lance. Umi had to choose a side but within her soul,she felt that I was correct,I was the only person that had a vision that had reasoning. Lance swung and I dodged the strike,he threw a few more jabs and again,I blocked and dodged them. The careless attacking allowed me to hit him right on his left jaw,he swirled around then fell down. Propping his was onto his feet again,there's a comment that had to be said.

" You should know that I never give up." I pointed out.

" Yeah,something that I plan to adopt from you - to use against you." he said and tried to punch me,I caught it then kicked him on the knee. He fell down then I assaulted him by striking him with my knee right to his nose. He rolled up then used a tackle on me then I collided into the hatch door. Lance decided to conjure a spell that struck me. It was bolt of electricity and the current was strongly trying to cause harm that I endured. I had survived a spell from the wizard of death,fell off a building and right after that tirade - I had to fight again,my energy levels had to be at a halt...even if it was not a progression that happened in an instance. The volts managed to scorch my power,Lance kept prevailing. I ran out of options and had to consider admitting defeat.

" Novices,right?" he taunted. I just had to let the volts be,I had thoughts,of how this war panned out and now - I could finally weave spells. My aura began to charge up power,this frightened my opponent and Umi was in awe. I began too rise,the volts were irrelevant now. Activated a spell then struck him and he fell,in that moment - the Cruiser shook then I conjured a new brand of spells and began using each and every one of the energies.

" I know that I am more than just a novice..." I commented. The entire fight escalated. Lance tossed daggers and used gunshots,I ducked then weaved a Wind-type spell that sent them away. We ran over and punched each other,a few times then he tried kicking,I kicked his legs away then had a sequence where I just kept punching and punching at him. I leaped over then struck him again right on his skull. Collapsing on the floor,the hatch door opened. I looked to it then Wes emerged. Still not a single word was exchanged between him and I,there was no violence began. Umi took to the wheel and the Cruiser gained altitude and speed. The turbulence was slight and now I had time to conjure a spell whilst in motion.

" Xavier!" called out Umi.

" Umi,Wes is here." I warned.

" We have bigger problems..." said Umi. There was an issuing of fighter jets to attack us. There were about 17.

" I gotta take them on then." I said then Wes leaped off and flew towards them.

" Okay,Wes will,we just need to navigate the problems." I said then Lance tackled me off the Cruiser. I fell,plugging to the ground from the skies. Falling,falling.

" I pray he doesn't remember how to fly..." pledged Lance. Wes was charging at the fighter jets,physically taking on the entire group whilst I had the view of his carnage.

" Okay,it's time to snap out it..." I said then harnessed the ancient force that allowed me to fly and I did. Back in the Cruiser,Lance walked into the control deck.

" Why did you charge right at them? Reverse,get back!" he commanded.

" Where's Xavier?!" asked Umi.

" He went out for fresh air to be honest." he replied.

" You threw him off the Cruiser?!" she loudly asked.

" He lied to all of us!" justified Lance.

" We don't know why he did it,we don't know his real story." said Umi.

" He's dead now. His story is buried and we can still salvage something from all of this..." he reminded.

" I'm not dead,I am a little more tougher than all think..." I said when I was at the edge of the Cruiser's door.

" Son of a gun,how did survive that?" he asked.

" I'm too stubborn,enough words now." I said then ricochet a bullet right to his right shoulder. He clinged it. The Cruiser took a hit,Lance slid down,conjured a spell,missed I flipped forward. When Lance stood up,I struck him with the Elemental beam,sending him off the Cruiser. Lance fell to his death,I closed the hatch doors. Panted and walked to Umi.

" If you are also trying to kill me,start now,I'm working on borrowed time." I said to her patiently. She was awfully silent,awfully too jaded.

" I don't want you dead but I need you to explain,why all of this? Why the lies? The mess? It is costing lives." she said whilst piloting the craft. I sighed,Umi needed the truth.

" Okay,here's what happened." I said then I heard voices in my head,they suggested that I search my pockets.

" Yeah,you can tell me what's going on now,we might be killed in a few moments. I began emptying out my pockets,there was many familiar things there. Wes began flying upwards into space.

" Okay,Wes is ditching us too." she said then the jets had clear shots that were taken by means of longe-range missiles that would impact in a minute. I kept emptying then after about just ten more seconds,still nothing. The missiles were traveling,aimed and ready to detonate. Umi panicked and conjured a spell called "Mirror Wave".

" Drop the spell,I got an idea." I said.

" Whoa,whoa,what?!" she frantically asked. She just blindly abandoned the Seal,waited for me. I got hold of a medallion,with the engravings so on Bronze's watch,the being we met and my dreams. There was a stone on the medallion and it had a mechanism on it. I basked at it for a few more seconds then pressed a buton the the side of the medallion. The ship was hoistede upwards by a mysterious force and the missiles missed since they weren't locked on. We were drifted away from Earth,into Space. Being under such a force gave me question how did Cunningham even gain such a weapon or helpful source of power. It was something that has existed for years and might even be something that Cunningham's mystery helper could have stolen too.

" Whoa..." said a gasping Umi when we left our stratosphere...

" I think I knew what I was doing for real this time..." I said.

" We are floating to the Moon again?" she asked.

" I,I don't know." I confessed. The speed of the force increased and the medallion shimmered,illuminated and I wasn't even worrying of where we were headed.

" There's Wes..." she said spotting the armor ahead.

" Yeah,he never bothered to even fight me..." I pointed out. After about 7 hours of floating around,we woke up and finally saw Bremagh's palace. Waking up and seeing it triggered memories,Umi was just entirely quiet. The medallion kept illuminating and gears winded at high speeds. The architecture and its placement in the Universe is what made me just recall a memory. I was not a novice in wizardry nor was I am lost cause to the world. I took to the pilot duties of the Cruiser 47 and steered it right to their hangar. The doors widely opened and rested the Cruiser. We landed onto the great structure.

" Wherever the medallion wanted us to be - this is the place." I said.

" We can't leave the ship,what if we can't breathe the air?" she asked out of concern.

" I got to see this place,what it is why we are here." I said then went to the hatch door of the Cruiser and offered Umi my hand as an invitation. Sh took sometime then she instead ran into my arms and hugged me.

" Best we die together,knowing that we tried everything..." she said then the doors were opened by me. We could breathe the air,it was pure then we stepped out the Cruiser then the entire hangar had some people attending to crafts and speaking,they all looked at us,we now stood besides each while we walked across to the door.

" If they attack,we attack." I said.

" Xavier,my energy levels are low,I'm still injured. I got to sit this one out." she reminded.

" Alright,I'll shield you,make way so you can run back to the Cruiser if it leads to that." I said.

" Sounds like a sacrifice." she said.

" Call it a strategy." I said then they finally spoke.

" Xavier!" shouted a lady in the crowd. I stopped whispering.

" Okay,see,I know somebody from this place. I mean no harm." I pledged.

" You are alive!" said another voice in the crowd.

" Yeah,I just hope neither of you all want me dead." I said. They were not even thinking of attacking. I stopped walking.

" Why did you even stop walking? They could be dangerous!" she whispered.

" Relax,I know what I am doing." I whispered back. Then I called them out.

" I need to know where Wes Parker is." I said to the entire crowd. They murmured first and some people had baskets of food they offered to an injured Umi.

" She's hurt,can you help her before you stuff her mouth with so much food?" I comically said to them. A few people walked in from the crowd,they were medics. I saw their attire and technology,it was all from my dreams. Umi was fully attended to and they used tools that actually had a great significance when they started working.

" You are in good hands." said the medic named Nigel to Umi.

" Thank you..." said Umi. I just nodded back to their approval. Now I needed to say my question once again,formally now a request.

" Now,I need to know where Wes Parker is..." I said.

After enough time asking,I finally went to his whereabouts which where in fact in the empire,splitting ways with Umi for now. I strutted to the place and kept venting,the doors to the location where slightly open and there was

conversations being held and I walked in. There was a bevy of people,dining and even the armored individual we believed was the great Wes Parker. I wore the medallion around my neck.

" People died today and you haven't breathed a word. I'm not complaining,I'm just reasoning why I will hurt you really,really bad." I said to him. The person touched the back of the armored helmet then it was removed by him. Finally,I met with the eyes of Wes Parker. He seemed like a humble soul,a mentor. I was completely a little dazed by this happening.

" We all missed you,Xavier." he kindly said. Wes reached out his hand for me to shake it. I was hostile,very hostile. I just kept away from all of them. Now I recalled a few people in the room,it was just all in my old memories.

" I remember you people..." I said faintly. Wes placed his arm away.

" Yeah,but we can explain everything." said Wes.

" This medallion,it's powerful. I just need time to understand everything." I said.

" The work of the medallion is complete,it brought you home and now you can finally see your father." said Wes.

" This is a lot far away from Knights Run and I am still not talking to my father." I said passive aggressively.

" Yeah,you are still lost..." speculated Wes.

" Me? Lost?" I questioned whilst I tried to link all of what was happening.

" Xavier,all will be explained,you'll understand everything when you see your father." he replied again. I heard someone sprinting at the corridors,the person was running towards this very room.

" I need to find Umi." I said then stepped outside. At the corridors then saw Milo,sprinting.

" Green!" shouted Milo to me while running.

" He's still upset." advised Wes.

" Yeah,and I should be dead." I said.

" You could die if you don't listen to what I am going to tell you now." warned Wes.

" Wes,not now. I gotta talk to him." I said then conjured a spell. He sprinted,conjured a spell then used shoot its energy right to me. I waited then I began to fight back using my spell,the energies locked horns.

" Yeah,call the repairman for all of this..." said Wes before there was even collateral damage. The energies combusted and I was just thrown yards away. Went back to my feet and regrouped what to do next. Milo took a longer time since he was still injured and was already breathing heavy.

" No spells,no guns,Milo." I said.

" Yeah,alright,now that's a serious fight." he commented.

" See,that's the thing - I am not going to fight you,try to make it seem like we are meant to be at war...I think the system expects us to be at war over how I once falsified why I was brought to the circle of people I now know. That's bullshit,we need back the times where forgiveness and unity are picked over glorifying depression and revenge. Now,I'm not saying you shouldn't kill me and I'm not saying look past my treason but the world needs heroes like me even if I wind up dead before I save that rock we call Earth." I said. Wes and company heard my words,Milo listened and there were people now by the hallways. Milo just seemed a little angsy over how I concocted the plan of dethroning the entire collective,I wouldn't have been strongly bias over them. They were mercernaries and I had to derail them without obligating violence as the first step but a step nonetheless. I decided to walk to Milo,I wasn't afraid,I didn't even have a spell ready to strike him. I walked to him blindly,not wanting to fight then I was about a few feet away.

" I am 20 but I still believe in world peace. When I return to Earth,I'll do right by using all of this power to protect humanity or so help me God..." I said then walked past him. Moving to a place of seclusion away from everyone there,I needed to make sense of what Wes says,after taking a few steps away from the crowd,I spotted a resident from Knights Run.

" Whoa,Otto?!" I asked baffled. He was always also looking for me.

" Oh,cool,I found you. How are you,Brethren? Hope the palace has been good to you so far." he said in a complete chatter.

" How did you even get here?" I asked.

" Well,Nora and I were brought here." he said.

" Nora? From the drunk tank? She is here?" I asked.

" Yeah,she is. She is waiting for you,just only a few minutes away from here." said Otto.

" Alright,great,I need normality from what has been going on." I said.

" Yeah,yeah. She needs to take you the place where you will finally speak to your father." added Otto. I just had a cold stare. Then we just walked to the Nora's whereabouts,she was sober when we arrived and kept telling us of how content she feels. We nodded with,Nora was a lot more quirky than when we first met. Walking in the corridors together,I just wondered who in fact was the identity of the person that needed to see me.

Knights Run
25 Columbus Road
1207 hours

Aquilla was in daring pain that escalated, all of this was formulated by wondering if I was no longer alive anymore, she was crying. Messages of concerns kept flooding on her phone, shut the world out and sat on her bed with everything I shared with her. On the bed too was The Property Of Carter. There was a knock on Aquilla's door. " Aquilla, it's your dad." said Bertram. She still reply, just kept crying and focusing on her woes. " There's someone here to see you, we'll be waiting for you at the pool when you are ready to talk." he said then left her to be alone. It only took for few more minutes for Aquilla to leave her room the attend to whomever paid a visit to her.

1214 hours

Aquilla wore a baggy shirt and a frown when she walked right to the pool, she couldn't help but feel that way. When the rays of the Sun touched her face, she saw whom it was that needed to talk to her - it was Knights Run's very own Detective Cunningham.

" Hello Aquilla, I'm Detective Cunningham of the Knights Run Police Department." he greeted.

" Talk to my lawyer, I seriously don't have time for this." she rudely dismissed and turned around, walked back to the house.

" Aquilla, I'm not here to charge anyone, I'm not here as just a cop." he replied and followed her.

" I care less about which hat you are wearing, where you are from or what the Hell you have to say. I have a flight to catch in a few hours and I don't look like the nicest person right now to relax with." She warned.

" I know you are worried about Xavier but he's alive." he reassured, Aquilla stopped walking and turned to Cunningham.

" I am still going to Frankfurt to find out everything." she said.

" All flights from and to Frankfurt are postponed because of what happened." he reminded.

" I made a few calls, a company is funding a plane to help with my search." she said.

" Aquilla, think rationally, there's three wizards that are captured at Frankfurt, they will somehow escape and use you to get back at what Xavier did. What Xavier did was also for you, for the world and for everyone." he reasoned.

Aquilla kept quiet, gathered thoughts of what he said.

" Okay, so what you want me to do is to stay in my room and stare at walls, hoping he'll magically return home? Because that's just something I have been doing for a while since I heard the news." she said.

" I said you should stay in Knights Run but I never said you should stay at home. I got your parents' blessings to relocate you to a safer place for a while. We need to be able to keep you safe." replied Cunningham.

" Okay, that's extremely drastic, we are not at war." she said.

" But we will be, soon. It's already hapening." he said.

" Okay, so when do we leave?" she asked.

" You have 20 minutes to collect what you need, we leave then. Your parents will leave with us to know the place. Don't tell another soul where you are, not even your preacher." he said.

" Alright and anything else I should know before I leave?" she asked.

" On the way, you need to tell me everything regarding Xavier. Everything because we know he is alive but we don't know what he now knows." he said.

" I won't sell you politics about the boy I care about, Cunningham." she said. Cunningham was a little baffled, not disappointed but thought Aquilla would speak in a more open nature.

" I need to pack, the place you are refering to sounds far." she said and dismissed herself. Cunningham sighed.

" She's a lot better after eating cereal..." said Allegra.

" You are out of milk?" he asked.

" Nope, the entire Frankfurt situation made it worse...plus the milk went sour." replied Bertram. Aquilla walked into her room, locked it for not any evasive happening to develop. She looked at the walls the most phenomenal event occured. Pages from the Property Of Carter were tearing themselves and sticking themselves on the walls of her room, it was even happening when she was there. She was mesmerized and so it transpired.

" I seriously hope that this won't take longer than 20 minutes..." she said to herself.

Bremagh's Palace

Nora and Otto were telling me what happened for them to be brought to this palace. It was my father, they kept saying and neither of them said his physical appearance nor name, just how powerful he is yet wise. We were outside the room that my father was waiting patiently.

"Now, this is your father, he is cool, powerful but cool. So just hear him out." said Nora.

"Also, you can ask him anything, talk about anything." said Otto.

"Yeah, this talk will be shorter than you think. I'll just have to ask him why he missed my Chess matches and why he never accepted any of the girls I brought home to meet him and Mum. You know, basically guilt-trip to my father." I said, there was silence then Otto had new parenthesis.

"Yeah, also don't trip over your shoe laces." he said, I chuckled and walked into the room alone. It was called the Throne Room and it was extremely vast. The ceiling were raised high and the floor could let masses gather and even have elbow room. I wasn't paying attention to the throne, this room was the same exact room I dreamt of the night before the heist. I was given a serious face then looked to the throne. There sat the very being that was at Aquilla's residence the night I wended up in the pool.

"It's you again..." I said. He kept quiet, I began slowly walking towards the table.

"What are you even doing here?" I asked. Still no words from him.

"Yeah, people around here need to learn to use more words..." I said then stopped walking.

"You are finally home, Son." the being said.

"You called you me 'Son'..." I told him.

"I am Bremagh, your father..." he said. I was baffled.

"Firstly, I'm not...blue. Secondly, I know you. You were at My girlfriend's house that one night. You are clearly a dictator of an alien world and now...you want to enslave Earth." I speculated.

"You are afraid of what will enlighten you already." he said.

"I know what I know - you cannot be my father. Both of my parents are cushioned somewhere in their house at Knights Run, not caring about me." I said. I grew a bit irritated by his claim of being my father, Bremagh just knew how to make me be at peace with everything.

"Lend me the medallion you know have..." he kindly asked, I took it off then tossed it to him. The medallion just floated onto his right palm.

"Now, I need to remind you of the world you are from..." he said.

"I pretty much know I am from Earth..." I said. Bremagh projected a Seal, it was a very powerful spell. A cube formed out of energy, Bremagh would then allow the medallion to float back to me. The cube was levitated in from of me, I could hold it using the palms of my hands. The medallion was back into my possession.

"The medallion's energies have been transferred into the cube I created." he said.

"You can place your palm on the cube whenever you are ready to know everything..." he said then waited for me to respond. I stood there for a few seconds then had something to say.

"I seriously need to see Eva after all of this..." I said then placed my right palm onto the cube - nothing happened in the first 5 seconds.

"The cube is not favoring me..." I said then it began - the cube's energy ran onto my right sleeve and engulfed my entire physical body. I gasped then crouched while the I felt the energy generate, heard shrills, heard voiced then I went onto my feet took a step back. Looking at the ceilings, thing moved then I floated about and then stayed there, I shut my eyes. I opened up my eyes and I was not in the palace anymore. I was in a warfront, not sure where I was or when I was either, all I know was that it was happening at a town and people were dying.

"Where the Hell am I?!" I asked myself while they were still firing then I heard soldiers regroup.

"We need to make sure Carter stays alive, people." said a soldier.

"If he dies, Earth dies..." said their leader. Then I saw a church crumble.

"He was in there! Get him out!" shouted another soldier, I ran to see what had become of the church walls, Carter was seething a way out and a spell was forged then it cleared out, he had a child that he was protecting from the destruction. Carter was a soldier too and he was holding the very medallion I wore around my neck.

"We all need to leave this warzone now." he said then they dispersed, the energy charged up again then I was blinked then I was in deep space. Just having a view on Earth, seeing it in tranquility despite the political wars.

"I need to fly down there..." I said then tried conjuring a spell, didn't manifest.

"Shit, I'm now lost in space." I complained then I saw a Cruiser fly past me. I let it pass then I saw something a little incredible - it was a fleet of ships holding component rooms that created the base of the Dark Side Of The Moon. I was witnessing the grand moment.

" Whoa,this began it all..." I said. The energy began charging up once again. I looked at Earth once again then tried to float to it then the energy spiked me and sent me away again,I closed my eyes then I was at a different time and place. I opened my eyes,I was at some occupied building. It had many people pacing back and forth. I still had to make sense of all the things that commenced again.

" I saw how Carter stayed alive,how the base ceased to exist but why am I here?" I asked myself.

" Parker!" shouted a lady in the room. A man with a hat stopped walking then turned around,he was grown,he wasn't Wes. He was related to Wes,his father perhaps or even grandfather. Parker looked attentive,she spoke to him about a rendezvous happening and he was summoned,he looked relaxed then just nodded.

" Wish you the best and hope they can help you find Bremagh's heir. The world needs him." she said. I was now more attentive,listening to what would be the most important information yet - my origins.

Chapter 8 - Views

I followed Parker to the place of the meeting, I had to be well wary of what transpired, how to walk and never be taken note of. I was out of time, away from where I needed answers, I needed to find hope for what I was seen to be. The meeting was at the very same premises. I was leaning on the door, listening to the very insightful details. There were voices, very different voices. I deduced that it was Parker and his associates. They were on a tug of war regarding an issue. The volumes of the voices was normal, not fueling and it showed that the level of priority of the issue meant being private and confidential. I began to charge up, touched the wall then it shook, created ripples then stopped. I let the wall be, on the place I touched, a seal formed on its own, seemed if it was scorching marks for the engravings then it began rotating. The charging stopped, my body stopped vibrating. The Seal was ideal, it allowed me to hear the conversation that was being held. I then started listening.

"We have been friends for so many years, we have fought together, almost died together..." said the female voice.

"Spare the sentimentality, Erica." said a male voice. Erica kept speaking though.

"What you are asking Parker will literally change the world. It will make humanity fear power." added Erica. Parker first kept quiet.

"Yeah, he's definitely related to Wes." I whispered to myself.

"I have a son on the way, my wife's about to make me the happiest person in the world. I can't smile yet until I can be rest assured that my fights do not become my son's wars." he said.

"Sorry to burst your bubble but going through such a move with because what mythology said? Yeah, I won't flood money into this circus of a show you wrote up." said the very voice that discouraged involving emotions.

"This isn't mythology, this is history, history I proved." he said.

"Yes, you have proven some things possible, thanks to your contact but what it is said by 'the only One' sounds like a bluff, it's a bluff. Meant to just make us recycle more, stop testing religion and even give more money to charity.

That's the quantum physics of humility." argued the male voice that was so jittery, his name was Neville, the person that was so negatively spoken and it was because of fear, he feared a higher power.

"Your writing is telling us that it is the end of the world, Parker. Now what you are saying is that we trust your project and this world won't burn." said Erica.

"No, I'm not saying that." replied Parker.

"Okay, what does this all amount to?" asked Neville.

"A choice. I am not going to argue anymore than I have already, knowing that you all fear the authenticity of my findings. There will be a new soul powerful than all of us, human, suit and wizard. We just need to find that person before the darkness of the world find him or her. Imagine how much havoc he could create with just tantrums when the person discovers the power within. Now, I must leave. Whatever you say next will either save the world or be the reason why it dies...." said Parker who just left the room and had the medallion on his hand, I decided to follow him, he went out of the building and into his car. To keep up with where he's going, I needed to fly. First, I had to try to run, which is what I tried to do and his acceleration dragged on then suddenly changed gears and it sped up.

"Got to fly..." I said then floated and then I flew, tried to catch up. The route was intricate, kept having more alleys being passed, I began to charge up. I became eagerly frustrated.

"No, wait!" I complained. I even landed then allowed the energy to consume me and I closed my eyes.

I opened my eyes and I returned back to when I was, standing with the cube gone. Bremagh was still seated on his throne. I finally made sense of everything, truly - I was Bremagh's heir. It was a cosmic relation, suited, biologically - I was my mother and father's seed. Now, the true argument he brought up is how much conspiracies were created around my arrival, my intentions to the world yet my neurons didn't click to star dust. I just took a step forward and look at the throne besides him.

"You are my father..." I admitted. Bremagh had a few more words to share.

"Yes...and now it is finally time to meet your cosmic family." he said.

Charozym
Frankfurt, Germany
2307 hours

On Earth,the great Lucias Crimson,Dominic and Hannah were captured and even sedated multiple times with the very same vile that was made to be a vapor. They were without their powers,no wizardry and even examined them psychologically. There were political motions that happened in the time and Lucias was now being sent off to a room to speak with a grand key player of the conspiracy society named Schmit. Lucias didn't even truly grasp an idea of where he was because of the amount of vapor in his lungs. He was dropped off into the room where there was light and a settled Schmit whom sat down and had a file with him. Lucias made it back to his feet,a little ridden off,he heard voices in his mind. The echoes taunted him,saying he is frail then they stopped. Lucias recalled a memory of how Wes easily stopped him. Schmit began speaking.

" This world is meant to be nothing else but a cloud for what is really grown. Gexir's words,not mine. You brought the rain in your finest hour...but failed." said Schmit. Lucias took a seat then had some words to speak.

" Yeah,you sound disappointed. I know my team caused your sour mood." he replied to Schmit.

" If you call such people a team,perhaps we grant your flukes in the past to be notorious but not innovative." said Schmit.

" You can't call of the crimes I led flukes. I traveled the world,beating every opponent and authority,every single obstacle. I proved to the world that I am a God." he said.

" We are not at your mercy,we still aren't,young Crimson. You are a ripple. You can never surpass Hitler,Stalin or even Rafin. Those are all waves compared to your ration because you are reliant on structure than unity,more power than control and most of all - you are not the one to be ranking. God Himself is meant to do so. Now,I might be as bearded but you,Crimson,have amounted to a fluke." he addressed,Lucas grew extremely insulted.

" I'll prove you wrong,I'll prove all of you wrong!" he shouted.

" I find that impossible since you'll be locked here until you lose track of time and your mind. By then,the vapor that you all have been breathing into your lungs will have permanently neurologically damaged you to the point where you can't conjure spells." he notified,Crimson cursed.

" Why don't you just kill us all already then?" asked Lucias,Schmit scoffed then pressed a button underneath the edge of his table alert the guards to collect Crimson and be send off to the containment unit.

" This is easier. We need to collect the few more faces then we can execute you all at once. Of course,one of you all is pardoned so it's one bullet that will not be used." said Schmit.

" Wait...who?" asked Lucias.

" It's none other than Xavier Green." said Schmit. Lucias finally new I somehow has the traitor within the plot,the guards collected him and fire and rage was seen in his eyes and an ancient evil awakened in Crimson's soul as he walked back. Now I finally had a true villain that would aspire to kill me.

Knights Run
1723 hours

Back home,Aquilla was settling in at the new location that was offered for her safety. The place was in fact swamped by military personeel and Knights Run Police Department. They had made it a very private setting but it seemed that Aquilla would be safer here. In the early hours of that day and during the time where the news coverage from Frankfurt aired,Cunningham pulled strings to get the military to intervene and preemptively start protecting Knights Run from the dangers of only Milo Washington and Umi Bonaparte since Lance was now presumed dead. Bertram and Allegra were cocooned Aquilla's aura,walking with her while Cunningham lead them around the confinements,it was literally a house,it was the house that Cunningham was raised in. It was at the outskirts of town so the house was surrounded by Apaches,tanks and even guard dogs.

" Your daughter will be safe here..." reassured Cunningham.

" I can only imagine the bill for all of this security." said Bertram.

" We are only left with two hostiles then this world will be free from wizard mercenaries." said Cunningham.

" I don't think it's that simple..." commented Aquilla.

" Well,Aquilla,this is what it is. We'll find Xavier when we lock up Milo and Umi at the Charozym and it will be happily ever after." said a jittery Cunningham. They walked into the house and there was screening of what they had in the clothing and needed to provide identification. The entire operation meant patrols around town and even the use of advanced warfare to help the special forces have an advantage against the dark forces.

After they were done screening,Cunningham then handed over a set of rules that were printed out and viewed by Aquilla. She already had a few complaints.

" This is just a regime,thee rules are like what my ancestors fought for." she said.

" Well,if it's keeping you and this town alive? Then yes,you are right." said Cunningham.

" Worry not,Aquilla,we'll be staying here for the first few days." said Bertram.

" Yes,that's already been arranged." replied Cunningham.

" Can you please give us a few moments,Detective?" kindly asked Allegra and he left them alone and walked to another part of the house. Aquilla's parents needed to address an issue that has been long-awaited.

" You and Xavier,it's more than just a platonic relation?" asked Bertram,she just nodded as a reply.

" Well,my little flower - after the storm passes,we expect you to cut ties with him forever." said Allegra.

" Whoa,wait,I think that-" said Aquilla,trying to object.

" This conversation is over." said Bertram,dismissing any opinion Aquilla held. An armed military officer went to the family.

" Good evening and thank you for your patience so far." said the officer.

" Wait,who are you?" asked Allegra.

" I'm Eric Copper,I'll be the frontman of this operation and I'll be your daughter's guardian the entire time." he said,Eric was finally home.

Bremagh's Palace

I walked with Bremagh to the room where my cosmic family was relaxing in,the doors were always gigantic. Walking in,I saw more blue beings that were even floating around in the room,chattering and even eating food. They all took their attention to me. It was perhaps a very touching moment when they all saw me,the silence was extremely shrilling.

" My son is finally home!" shouted my cosmic mother Iris,her eyes sparked joy. They cheered and flew to me and greeting,introducing themselves,they were cousins,uncles,aunts and even close friends that had something to say about me. Most of it was positive and just created a warm welcome for me. It was all cheers,beautiful moment to see the entire family reunited. They spoke about how they had gifts to share with me,I just grew an expression over how they were so overly joused to speak to me and spend time. Other than being purely human and them being vastly powerful,I was a shoe-in. I just had to be pardoned for a while,had to somewhat have a sense of the room,didn't dismiss them rudely,the window to the outside world had so many constellation and families of star dusts that had all hues in them. My mother asked a question.

" Son,are you okay?" said my mother.

" Yeah,I'm just a little swamped with all of this. It's all new to me,the powers,the cities being under attack. Everything. Even this family." I said. My cousin Vem had a few words to share,he finally needed to let me know of more news.

" You are the only one of us whom had to ascend from Earth,Brother. It will take time for you to understand our ways and know that Earth is just a beacon." he explained.

" Just a beacon? I left 7 billion people alone there,with just the authorities being willing to take on the enemies I probably made." I said.

" It sounds as if you need to decide on something,Son. Gladly so,you can decide." said Bremagh.

" There's more to it,I still need to do right by what I promised." I said. Bremagh finally showed his perspective about humans.

" Humans have been disappointing you for your whole life. They have failed to see your paramount,your influence and your grand power before you even existed. The ones that have believed in you were killed or shut out because human nature is afraid of being tamed,of being governed and being placed into a moral vise. Now the very masses are going to be made a mess of then we'll have to be the new world,a paradise. Son,this has always been the mission,the plan. You are here and we just need to take a seat at the throne and I promise that the family will salvage the lives of all of the people on Earth that you care about." said Bremagh,I sensed anger in his words,anger to the world. I now needed to just take a simple factor to mind,I knew that Lucias has become a fiend over the news with my alliance with the world authorities and he would create a rampage in the near-future when he escape the facility that they placed him in. Everything was based on the question of time now and who had the most patience at this pressing time. I clearly began lacking patience and flaunting potential but never unlocking it,I knew that days in the palace would bear the knowledge that could help me get rid of Lucias permanently.

" I'll stay here for a while,house Milo and Umi with but I need to make that decision too..." I said then began to walk amongst them. I was walking past,thanking my cosmic relatives for the warm welcome and I left the room after then. Bremagh had to reassess how I was his son.

Milo was letting off power because of his grim mood,he just had the privacy of a training room and was just running a complete path of war in the room,I walked in with him still using spells,destroying the objects then he waited for a few.

" Milo..." I said to him. He didn't rush to respond.

" Xavier,I am in my element. There's no need for you to just waltz in when I am...in my element." replied Milo. I surely needed to speak to Milo right away,he was angsty over the discovery of my allegiance and the fact that we were all sent over to a palace that floats around in space and is anchored by spells. I invited a challenge to him,I went to the wall,saw swords and shields. I took off some of those shields and swords then threw a few to him which he caught. They were balconies in the room that were made use of by Otto,Nora and Umi who just arrived and was guided to there and seemed like she wanted to speak to both of us.

" Oh,no..." said Otto. I held a shield up and carried the sword on my right hand,Milo took up the weapons too.

" He does know that a small part of Milo still wants to kill him, right?" asked Nora.

" Well,let's hope that the paramedics are near..." said Otto.

" Let's spar." I said.

" Okay...we definitely need a medical team nearby now." added Otto. Umi began weaving a spell for in case if things get out of control.

" Alright..." said Milo and we began walking towards the centre of the room.upon walking...I knew how I needed to have Milo and Umi to help me deal with a crisis so I needed to speak to him whilst walking I had about not more than 30 seconds.

" By now,Lucias knows about my plan that worked. He's captured but I don't know for how long..." I said.

" That's still the least of your worries." said Milo.

" Does it have to be? 7 billion lives could be in danger when he breaks out. It's a definite crisis,inevitable." I said to him.

" Yeah and the team will band again." said Milo.

" Yes but they'll be a new team by then. I am going to captain it." I said.

" We'll be enemies again. I should just kill you first now." said Milo.

" We don't have to be. I need you to be a part of my team. It's just me, Umi and Wes." I said.

" Huh?" he said then we were at the moment of beginning to duel. Then he struck, I blocked using my shield then punched back repeatedly. I used the shield to push him away.

" We can be a team or just let the world burn. There's no other choice." I said and Milo ran up and he struck again.

" You sound like you want to be a hero. Heroes don't live on Earth anymore." he said. Milo hit his shield on my knee,went down then he punched me.

" They just die." he said. I started to derive something from Milo's concept of what a hero is.

" You failed someone you really care about when she needed you..." I said. Milo just ket quiet,I dropped my sword then anchored me up and just checked my breath. Milo knew I was right. He charged at me,I dodged then struck his lower back using my shield and he fell to the ground. Milo stood up then still had no words to say.

" Her name was Audrey..." said Milo finally said then dropped his shield and attacked countless times mercilessly,I kept deflecting with my shield,I got hold of his wrist then struck his joint with the shield,Milo dropped his sword then I a took a step back then tackled him with my shield.

" You didn't fail her. She's hoping for you to try and be a hero again. Even if it means that the villains are a lot more powerful." I said then I just dropped my shield. Milo was obviously taking note of my words despite his expected rage. He just stood up and was once again ready to brawl. I had to also consider fighting.

" This madness ends." said Umi and leaped over to the floor.

" Xavier,Milo!" she called out our names and we looked towards her. She didn't bear a weapon,just a few words. We all formed a triangle from where we would stand.

" Xavier is right and I know why. The elixir meant to wipe his memory never worked,he faked it for infiltration. Knows everything,flourishes and winds up flying. This is all part of an old mythology - "The Fall Of Rafin". Now,I am on his team,Milo - I am on his side,I'm willing to fight against Lucias and whomever will be aligned with him." said Umi. Milo finally,finally made sense of the mythology. It spoke of an Elemental Wizard whom was meant to be the son of legendary Bremagh would rise from the oppression and dethrone a warlord from wreaking havoc on Earth.

" You are Bremagh's son. It would explain everything. I seriously mean everything." he said,I just nodded.

" Dude,respect. I hated you for certain things but respect." he said and we shook hands,the fight dissolved. I just needed to be simple as well,my rank meant nothing if I could not forge a union against a tamed Lucias.

" I hope that's out of respect than fear. I'm unlike Lucias nor Rafin." I said.

" Well at this point it doesn't matter, we are away from Earth, you have to rub shoulders with your new family and the Rover isn't pardoned. Yeah, what matters is leaving this place." said Milo.

" Wait, what do you mean when you say that the Rover isn't pardoned?" I asked.

" It is ready to pounce. Only if Lucias can link his mental stream to it." said Umi.

" The Rover is not child's play, it kills and surely it will kill you first. Well, after it kills the guards. Thing is, it locks onto your DNA then hunts you down." said Milo, I just smiled using my left cheek and just started walking towards the door.

" He has a plan." said Umi anxiously.

" Yeah, he has one. It'll probably almost get us killed." said Milo.

" Guys, let's go, we got to prepare right now." I said.

" The Rover kills! Lucias kills! They just need the nuclear power and Gexir's Cradle!" said Milo.

" Yeah, okay, duly noted. Let's go." I said. They followed with and I began to speak up on what I know, where Property of Carter is and where they'll conceal Gexir's Cradle. Now, we went to the workshop where weapons and mechanics were crafted. I knew how to finally defeat and put an end to it all.

Charozym
0307 hours

A week passed since I joined forces with Umi and Milo, much work was placed into what we would combat any evil, well, we derived anything working against the world was evil. Conditionally, Bremagh wasn't evil, just not initiative. Aquilla was beyond bored whilst being heavily guarded by Special Forces to preemptively stop any attacks forwarded to her, she was aching since her parents gave her a demand regarding the relationship that her and I have. I just hoped all will be well. Now true evil ressurected in the containment that was a new home to Lucias. He finally showed cracks to his spirit, the fumes made me grow pale, tired and drained of so much power. By then, so was Hannah - she began hallucinating about her dead younger brother and Dominic was trying to muscle his way out, kept punching into the solid steel walls with no luck. There was a sudden evoke in darkness within Lucias' containment. He was seated in a dark corner, without a cause, without nothing. A voice echoed.

" You are meant to be the world's greatest wizard that this world. You were meant to let evil guide you." the voice said. Lucias listened.

" I'm not a monster anymore." he said in a whisper. The voice scoffed, taunting Lucias. The young wizard stood up and was now conversing with the literal consciousness of the dark side, a very perilous talk. It was echoing the motivation to turn heel, kill countless people. Lucias was completely testing waters by not resolving into the true stature of being a Tombstone wizard, a sorcerer of death. The accolade of such a power meant being a martyr. Now the voice was from a grand master of wizardry, the code of ethics were all about being great and no less. Trumple any form of adversary out there, for Lucias to be initiated into such a path - he had to sought me as an adversary.

" You aren't a monster at all, I have a deal for you." said the voice.

" Your deals are like vices..." criticized Lucias.

" My deals, they, they build countries. They make people famous. Your deal could let you be a god for the rest of your life." said the voice.

" But you hate God..." criticized Lucias. The voice scoffed then just had a new view to how Lucias thought of power, he was naïve to think that power is governed by belief when in fact that power is in abundance when you make a pact.

" You need to see the light, only to corrupt it and all I ask is for you is to kill the young Xavier Green." the voice said.

" Xavier is dead. My spell struck him and he fell. No one survives any spell of death conjured by me." he said.

" He has, perhaps it is time you employed a more effective instrument of war." said the voice.

" I can't summon the Rover from the Dark Side Of The Moon, the fumes are suppressing my abilities. Won't be able to conjure for a few days." he said then the hissing of the fumes stopped. There was a cloaked figure in the room and underneath the soles of Lucias, there was seal that was oozing in darkness, in sheer power. The figure said nothing, just stood there, Lucias began to link her mind to the Rover which awoke then began moving, leaving the base using the hangar. Lucias opened his eyes then agreed to the terms.

" We have a deal..." said Lucias then the Seal fell out of effect, vanishing then the figure was gone too. The fumes continued to enter the room. Lucias just sat down on his bed and awaited the arrival of the Rover. He had a smirk on his face.

Bremagh's Palace

Umi, Milo and I were at our own workshop which was in the palace, speaking about my life, my abilities and my affiliations with the mighty Bremagh.

"I am the son of Bremagh, the world's greatest wizard that exists..." I said to them in awe while Milo was continuing to finish repairing the Cruiser 47 and Umi just checking off weapons and guns.

"You are the future, imagine the influence." said Umi.

"What stands in the way of you being great is defeating Lucias, all seems symbolic and lot dangerous." said Milo.

"I know about the Rover, an ancient machine used by Tombstone wizards. The Rover kills, it resembles a beast, has its own thoughts and has objectives." I said.

"Great you know so much about it but fighting it is another scenario." explained Umi.

"Yeah, I know. I survived Purgatory, I can survive this fight." I said.

"Done with the Cruiser, it's time to break the news to your dad so that we can all go back to Earth." said an amped Milo. I nodded then Umo placed away her list. Wes walked in, he had instruction.

"All of you. Let's march." said Wes.

"Okay, we'll leave after we are done with Wes' request then." I said, just agreeing.

"Yeah, you have a point." agreed Umi

We were sent off to a new room where we could have a view of any place on Earth, they called the room "Views" and it was completely made up of wizardry, functioned using wizardry and it was used by everyone even the ones that lack wizardry. We were given information regarding the events that spun around Charozym in that hour. Yes, Lucias was fleeing with Hannah and Dominic. They were using the very Rover I was warned about, they didn't weave spells, just relied on being guided by the Rover. This ferocious beast was breathing heavily, firing blasts right through the premises, causing loss of life. The personnel at Charozym were taking a stand, firing back at the machine of destruction, nothing seemed too successful to derail it.

"This is happening now." said Wes. I was entirely shocked, Milo remained silent.

"How is this all possible? Lucias can't summon the Rover without a conscious mind.

"That's we all know. There was a presence of darkness that's over the charts. It was not your normal or overhyped readings." said Wes. I knew that Lucias would circulate a way for an escape. I was visibly seeing how impressively powerful the Rover was. It had its own thoughts, own ideas of fighting moves and its own means of warfare. The Rover then created a warping energy beam that would tear apart the walls of the juggernaut. The Rover could run through the building, detonate it and leave with Lucias and the rest. I now felt like I need to run down to Earth anxiously, of course - Earth was far. I only stood and watched.

"The Rover shouldn't get to Lucias!" said Milo.

"We need to get there." I said.

"No. It's too dangerous." said Wes.

"I agree." said Umi, agreeing with Wes. I was just in the thrill to fight, the mood to finally fight Lucias in an all-out brawl. I knew how to defeat him now, it was based on an array of spells. The problem was that the Rover found the Cradle firstly, it was sent to Charozym for inspection. I got a better glimpse at the Rover, it was like a four-legged beast, resembled a wild cat and was as gigantic as a transportation truck. The Rover walked to the next field, trying to free Lucias. We just stood there and watched. Schmit walked in on the field and had a gun that was fairly different, advanced. He shot at it, missed then the Rover let off a fume that pushed them away. The first containment that was broken out was Lucias' place then he walked out. A few paces, he was where Schmit fell, then forcefully took his gun. Schmit just woke up then had his hands up.

"You are not going to go far with all of this, you aren't invincible." vouched Schmit.

"Neither are you." he said then he fired at Schmit. The gun hit him and he flew off into a great distance, hitting the floor and seemed dead. Lucias used the gun on other soldiers and helped the Rover cause mayhem. They reached Hannah's containment unit and the Rover shot it wide open. Hannah was floating in the air. Her locks were flowing down to the direction of the ground and she was very pale.

"Shit, what's happening to her?" I asked.

"It's a complicated problem that Hannah has. She only told the collective about it." said Umi.

"She's in the Realm of Thieves." I said.

" How did you know?!" questioned Milo.

" Clearly you slept with her." said Wes.

" No. I know this because of I read Property Of Carter." I said.

" You said that it's safe. I know it is. It's in Knights Run but I think it's time we got it from your town and bring it here." suggested Milo.

" Great idea. In fact,it's a fundamental. Let's rev it up and leave now." I said.

" Guys,Lucias is speaking to her." said Umi. Lucias placed down the gun and held her hand,she was away when she was in the Realm of Thieves. She was highly dangerous however.

" Wake up,Hannah..." whispered Lucias. Nothing changed. She was still in that realm. The Rover freed Dominic whom,after a breath of fresh air,was already fighting soldiers using his bare hands,cracking skulls.

" Hannah..." called out Lucias once again then she stared at him dead in the eyes and didn't even utter a word,she tilted her to the right and still looked at him. It seemed as if Hannah wanted to hurt Lucias on that very moment,she strangled him.

" Whoa..." I said. She wasn't hesitant about this,Lucias was held up by her. Hannah's state was more violent,the Rover and Dominic managed to make waste of the security of Charozym.

" Surely don't need powers to make a mess of you all." boasted Dominic. Lucias knew how to make an ally of Hannah,he brought forth an enemy for her.

" Xavier lied to us. Deceived us." he said to her. She kept strangling him. Clearly Hannah was no puppet. Dominic found an SUV that had 7 seats and was armored.

" I need a jet of some kind." he commented then turned to his right and saw a cargo plane.

" Wait,we are letting them get away?!" asked a person in room,we all looked to the person with a look that simply asked the very person to keep quiet then looked back to the events. Lucias was still in the troubles caused by Hannah then she ceased to be present to the Realm of Thieves,it wasn't words nor sheer propaganda that set her away from the state - she did this on her own. Hannah was not saying a word,she just let Lucias go then landed on her feet. Still said nothing.

" Okay,we need to go to your father now. Get the Hell out of here and return with the Maxima." said Milo.

" Yeah,cool,I got it. I just need to call Aquilla first. Hopefully you all have a landline here." I said.

" You shouldn't be too sure about everything." said Wes.

" You managed to beat us all up and that was easy,you kind of sound like a hypocrite." said Umi.

" Lucias isn't just Lucias anymore. He is deranged,ignited." commented Wes.

" He has been this way for a long time and perhaps it peaked now. So be it,we aren't just a bunch of teenagers too." I said.

" All I'm saying is that watch out and be careful." warned Wes. I gravely saw how powerful Lucias became and now he had allies that threatened the world. Milo and Umi walked out,marching to Bremagh's current location.

" There's something you need to see." said Wes. He sent off the focus to Knights Run where I saw a resting Aquilla. She was peaceful,in harmony.

" Now,I don't care what you all decide,I care less about the politics that started - just do the best thing for Aquilla's sake." said Wes whilst he saw her markings glow. I went out of the room and slowly walked to Bremagh's location as well whilst Umi and Milo sprinted.

With their arrival first to Bremagh,whom was in the Throne room,Umi and Milo began to state their case right away.

" We need to leave and go back to Earth." said Milo.

" You are not permitted to." said Bremagh.

" We decided to ask for permission now rather to ask for forgiveness later." said Umi.

" You do not have to break out of this place,you can freely walk away. However,Xavier does not have the obligations to set foot out of the palace. So it'd be futile for you two to walk into this fight without him." explained Bremagh.

" Yeah,you know,we should have just stuck with plan A." said Milo.

" Which was?" asked Bremagh.

" Tell you that we are leaving and stop us...you'd have to catch us." said Umi.

" Sounds impulsive,sounds very rash. Exactly who was the person that thought of such a plan?" questioned Bremagh.

" I did..." I said slowly walking in,I had a shield and sword which I crafted myself days before. Clearly I needed to send a message.

" I get it,you resent the humans,try to make something out of everything but this is the world's security we are talking about here and it got compromised." I said.

" So you want to fix the world's security?" asked my father.

" We want to be the world's security." I said.

" Okay,that's a little too ambitious." whispered Milo.

" All we ask for is a chance. A chance to save the world and not just try. Save all of the billions of lives." I said to Bremagh. He shared a concern to us.

" You are my son,you could die trying." said Bremagh. I looked at Milo and Umi,they were all ready to risk their lives,be heroes to the world.

" I know that. We are also children of the geat Steve Biko and Mother Teresa. Our uncles are John F. Kennedy,Martin Luther King and Mahamat Ghandi. They would want us to use the power for the sake of humanity. There's no need to argue to over their races,their times or which opression they dealt with,they were heroes." I said. The moment was epic,Bremagh was finally convinced of what my team and I could accomplish.

" Travel safely to Earth and always remember what you are going to war for." he said.

" Yeah,this gives me goosebumps." whispered Umi.

We were dismissed by Bremagh and now walking back to the work station where the Cruiser 47. Milo was talking about tactics to subduing Lucias' team and spoke of what I should keep noting regarding the vicious Rover. I wasn't even focused on that,images of my dreams flooded my mind. I just picked up my phone and tried to call Aquilla while Milo was still speaking. She answered.

" Hello..." she said,whilst static tweaked her voice.

" Aquilla,it's Xavier." I said. She began to start crying tears of joy when she heard me speak.

" You are alive. You are,you are alive." she said with happiness and tears rolling down her cheeks.

" Yeah,I am. I need you to not let anyone know for now." I said,with tears streaming down too. Aquilla collected herself a lot more,she had to listen to me.

" I understand why but where are you? Are you hurt? Return home." she said.

" Not yet but soon. I need you to just be careful. A lot of things will happen in the next few days but I'll get there in time for you." I said.

" Okay,but Xavier - be careful." she pleaded.

" I will be. I promise. I'll see you soon and Aquilla,always know that I care about you." I said then I ended the phone call.

" You know that things get worse from here. Purgatory was peanuts compared what we are up against." said Umi.

" I know,which is why we are going to be building something that could help us win." I said.

" Alright,Umi and I have got to go to Knights Run as it is,salvage lives and get the book." said Milo.

" No,no. I need you both here to wrap up what I'm building. It's too awesome and it needs the best wizards to complete the weapon." I said with confidence. Umi was baffled while Milo kept quiet for a few moments then commented.

" It sounds like you are building a bomb." said Milo. Then we just kept walking,I went into details regarding what I wanted to create,it was something that I was inspired to build when I spent days in the palace. I started to believe that the weapon was able to be built when Milo and Umi were now my allies - I knew I could built the very weapon. Bremagh was just seated,recollecting what I said about making a difference,clearly he felt that I was a brave child and it was a question to see if I could save the rock he called Earth.

Chapter 9 - The Reckoning Of The Dark Side

Chernobyl,Ukraine
1007 hours

It has been over a fortnight since Lucias escaped with the lives of Hanna and Dominic. Crimson still made the pact and was resting at a lifeless Chernobyl,plotting to make waves into the world,violent waves that are just about tyranny. Seated in a building,admiring the view - he was joined by Hannah whom walked in on him just reminiscing.

" Recall how I found you?" he asked Hannah without needing to see her walking into the room. Hannah would take paces then stand next to him.

" Yeah,it was after the accident. I lost my little brother that night." she said.

" I was broken." she added.

" Now,you have to ask the most important question - where to from here?" asked Lucias.

" I just want to send a message." she said. She spent a moment to reconcile with her ideas.

" Finally,everything led to that." said Lucias,whom had parenthesis.

" The world will not be at peace until Xavier Green is killed." added Lucias. Hannah nodded to his proclamation. The two walked out of the building to the outside world,wizards were born with the ability to be immune from radioactivity. The Rover was walking around while Dominic tweaked a computer.

" Lucias,the Moon is almost in position,just need a week. We can use Gexir's Cradle to create New Earth." said Dominic.

" And the amount of nuclear power?" asked Hannah.

" We got the Rover to unearth it then send it to the spot." said Dominic.

" I need Maxima to complete everything. With Xavier in hiding,we have so many challenges trying to find it,even with our complete powers being restored." said Lucias.

" Reroute the data to these specific co-ordinates." said Hannah the she handed over a device that had those co-ordinates dialled in. Dominic placed the device on the table then clicked those very co-ordinates,checking when will Moon creep near to those whereabouts.

" Alright,let me reroute the data and check out the readings." said Dominic whilst Lucias and Hannah spoke about something else.

" Have you decided which buildings are you going to use for that new spell of yours?" asked Lucias.

" Yeah,I need a block of buildings and I will begin building from now. Need the Rover to help me bring down the walls." she said.

" Alright and you can control it,right?" asked Lucias.

" Yeah but we both know that it's no longer about controlling things anymore." she said.

" Just be clear to the cause. Whomever Xavier has made allies with will regret that decision. That's the cause and the reason for the inception of your new spell." said Lucias.

" Trust me,they will not be prepared for what I will bring to them." said Hannah. Dominic finished rendering data.

" The co-ordinates are perfect,the statistics are over the charts. I vouch that wew move the entire operation to the very place." said Dominic.

" These co-ordinates are specific. Where exactly is at those co-ordinates?" asked Lucias.

" Just a library." said Hannah.

Bremagh's Palace

We were finally done with the weapon which was concealed with a veil. The work station was completely occupied by the three of us. There was ginger ale,blueprints,a few nickels,our cellphones and books of the history of Bremagh's clan. My origins where of a great civilization. Older than the Mayans and it gave rise to the greatest empires,our descendents were great men and women. Presidents,billionaires and even people of great influences.

" Finally..." said Milo who sat down and was in awe of the creation.

" Yeah,it's complete. Now we can headd to Earth,quickly get the book and Aquilla. Take our time to find a way to beat Lucias,everyone stays alive." I said.

" You marry Aquilla and have little kids running around." said Umi. They were clearly teasing me about things.

" Tell those little buggers how their dad practically went into a suicide mission. And recruited us. Probably this is the best time of our lives and this could be the last time we stay alive." said Milo.

" Point is,we are fighting for the everything we love." I said.

" They will bring war." warned Umi.

" It doesn't matter. I love my city,I love my girl and I still love my family. Try to take that way,I'll bring Hell." I said.

" Now,violence. That's the only answer to everything." said Milo. All that was needed was to simply leave and do what we spoke about,it could be a day later,time was still on our side. Nora and Otto walked in to the work station.

" Xavier,there's a problem." said Otto.

" Lucias has been terrorizing countries for the past few days. Stole a few things with the help of two accomplices. They raided a few research labs,military bases and even banks." said Nora.

" He's after all sorts of power." said Umi.

" Casualties?" I asked.

" Yeah,a lot of them,in masses." said Otto.

" This isn't like Lucias. He always had tolerance,this is him enraged." said Milo.

" Where was he last spotted the last time?" I asked.

" Whoa,whoa,Xavier - you can't go against him on your own." warned Umi.

" The last location was at Pretoria,South Africa. By the Union Buildings,loitering. At the very time,both of his accomplices were in Bulgaria." notified Nora.

" I am not planning on going to fight Lucias alone. I know he'll offer truce with the condition that we help him with his plan. He has a plan. It is unclear for now but it is there. I say that we go to my homefront. Wait there." I said.

" You just want us to chill at Knights Run? They have the Cradle,they just need the book. Doing that would be like an open invitation to fight at your turf." said Umi.

" That is the plan,we'll have homeground advantage." I said.

" I agree. It's the best way to actually conclude all of this." said Milo.

" Alright,I hear you,Captain. I agree. This is how we save Earth. Let's save Earth." said Umi,agreed.

" Yeah,I need a drink after all of this." said Nora.

" Alright,let's get started. We need to travel to Earth now. Milo,fire up the Cruiser 47. We need to gear up." I said.

" Xavier,we brought in gear for you all. We thought you'd have to upgrade from your current attire." said Otto.

" Cool,like all heroes." said Milo cheerfully.

" Yeah,I,I - I thought you guys were going to be offended." said Nora. Now it was just the absence of fear,spoke of how we would go about trying. The concept of bringing war home had reasons,I knew that city better than any of my opponents. I still had connections and parkour to help with the pending brawl. Otto handed over the research files of Lucias and placed our new gear onto the table.

" Good luck to you all." he said then left the work station. My father Bremagh finally walked into our work station,he was silent however,reserved his opinion of my plan to save the world. He just looked around the station quietly and always looked at Umi and Milo. He had a sense that my allies were inferior and I perhaps needed his personal army.

" You have a Reality wizard and a Mirror wizard for allies. Impressive but this union has flaws." he said.

" Well,every team does but that's not important." I answered.

" Your aircraft will deteriorate within 10 minutes of battle." he speculated.

" We have the best pilot." I said. Milo nodded.

" And before you ask about our weapons being very standardized,I should tell you that's now how powerful weapons are rather how you use them." I said in addition to my reply.

" I only find it best to utilize my personal army." said Bremagh.

" No. This is our war." I said.

" What your very capable son is saying is that we can manage this mess. Less collateral and we probably will need the army...in another fight." humbly said Umi.

" And...AND,we cannot govern your army. Read the books,had nightmares about how crazy all of the incidents escalated." said Milo. Bremagh could not question us no more,he didn't have much to keep losing faith in.

" This is all impulsive. You could all die." he warned.

" Thanks for the warning. Let my cousins know that I'll be home for Christmas." I said then I began packing to leave to Earth.

After an hour and a half - Umi,Milo and I were seated in the Cruiser 47,revving up its engines. We were leaving to Earth,it'd take a longer time since the medallion's abilities were not with us and the Cruiser needed to take its time with the traveling since we needed to still speak concerning the possible locations of Lucias Crimson and what he was planning. The aircraft rose from the hangar and took off.

" We got air." said Milo.

" No turbulence. The Cruiser is flying well." reported Umi.

" Great,everything is in configuration. Now we need to get there in time." I said.

" Well,that's not going to be a problem. Question is,where do we land?" asked Milo. I took some time to find the right place.

" I got it." I said.

" Just don't worry about it anymore." I added. The Cruiser kept flying.

" Thank you Umi and Milo." I said.

" Don't thank us yet..." said Umi.

Knights Run

1549 hours

Aquilla was escorted everywhere. I meant everywhere. The female personeel would walk into the restroom with her and wait while she closed the door. She practically could not have time of her own without being watched over. It was finally time for her to let Eric Copper know. While still shopping at the Mall,about 7 armed personeel including Eric were strategically placed around the very shop she was in,she knew this. Now,with Eric next to her,she shared a few words.

" I am completely safe. You bombard me,all of you." she said,out of the blue.

" This is your first complaint. Not bad,thought you'd vent within the week." said Copper,applauding my resilience.

" No,no,no. This isn't venting,this is me saying the obvious. You are all flooding my space!" she said blantly to Eric.

" You are just being overboard." he justified. A clerk whom was helping Aquilla find a product asked her something.

" Ms Rhodes,which brand of tampons do you prefer?" the manager awkwardly asked.

" Alright,you have made your point,we'll wait in the parking lot." humbly said Eric.

" Thank you." said Aquilla softly. She then attended to the manager while Eric walked to the exit of the store.

" I need the most expensive brand." she said.

" Alright,we got it." said the manager then she handed it over to her. Aquilla began walking to the counter with her other groceries,she was completely liberated and even had time to just think clearly. She knew what she would say to her parents' demands regarding my affiliations with me. On her way to the counter,she ran into a friend of hers.

" Aquilla!" greeted her friend Kate.

" Kate! How are you?" she replied.

" I'm great,I'm great. My family's great. How have you been holding up?" she asked her.

" Well,I spend some time being guarded like I have the ability to create a new world. Xavier is gone missing but he calls me like he is a time-traveller. Both my parents hates his guts and we can't call it being racist since,you know - he blew up Frankfurt! That's not even the worse part,I'm now being hunted by the successor of the Grim Reaper and two other evil wizards whom will bring Hell on Earth...basically,I'm fine." she replied,Kate was beyondly shocked,didn't flinch. Clearly Aquilla was frustrated despite the guards and so forth.

" On the bright side,you aren't gaining any weight." said Kate. Before she could even say anything regarding her comment,Aquilla's phone received a call.

" Can I take this call?" she asked.

" Yeah,sure." said Kate. She saw the name of the caller and just answered right away.

" Xavier!" she greeted.

" Yeah,I'm here,you know,alive." I said.

" Okay but where are you?" she asked me.

" Still in Space." I said to her.

" Whoa,wait - you are in Space?" she questioned.

" Yeah,outer Space. You know,moons,stars and even meteors." I said.

" Okay,I believe you. Really,I do. You are a wizard." she said.

" Well,it's a lot more to it. But now's not the time. I need to know where is the book that I gave you." I said to her.

" The Property Of Carter is at my home." she said.

" Alright,I need it. I'll collect just swing by your house and get it." I said.

" Use the secret door." she said.

" Got it,will do. See you soon." I said. She grew a smile and I was happy to hear from her again. We both concluded the call. Kate was just still standing there.

" Great to see you smile. I couldn't just leave." said Kate.

" Thanks for being a true friend,Kate." she said then hugged her. Aquilla just cheerfully walked to the counter,paid then scurried to the parking lot where a convoy was parked around the car that was guarded. The personeel were outside,speaking of memories then they saw Aquilla walking in the distance,with a smile on her face. They were all baffled however. During all of this,soldiers were still patrolling the town,looking for any supernatural incidents. Aquilla finally got to the convoy but stood outside with Eric and a few soldiers,there was static in the radio connection created for Copper and his entire division.

" Great,enjoyed the freedom I see." said Eric.

" Yeah,I did,it was great,had elbow room. I got a call from Xavier. He's almost here." said a cheerful Aquilla.

" That's perfect,meaning that we'll have to investigate him and examine his well-being." said Eric.

" No,wait,you are missing the point here." she said.

" What is the point." asked Eric.

" He knows everything." she said then there was an explosion that happened,it hurled cars and people away. It happened about a few miles East from where they were,they got rattled and Eric got Aquilla into the car. The convoy was now rushing to get into motion. Now that everyone within the convoy was seated,they screeched tires and drove out of the parking lot,routing to the outskirts of town. The explosions were clearly caused by wizardry,the convoy was just speeding and Eric was driving the car that Aquilla was in. She was at the back of the car,with two armed soldiers and the car was built with the capabilities of surviving a warzone.

" All units,our convoy is heading back to the base,we need air support and a few more convoy vehicles to assist." said Eric over the radio transmission. The convoy was clearly well prepped. Aquilla had her heart racing without even knowing whom was causing all of this havoc. The explosions erupted again and making their way to the convo which outran the blast range.

" Crimson is here!" she said.

" Yeah,the Grim Reaper is here." said Eric Copper. The police department was already on the road,trying to help the convoy move at peace. All was well then there was a sport car that was speeding right behind the convoy,it was 100 yards away. Aquilla was the first to spot it. The traffic was not present.

" Air support is due in 2 minutes." said Eric.

" Yeah! We have a problem." she loudly. Using mirrors,Eric saw the sport car and had one simple order,it was crooked how he said this command.

" All units,first group to destroy the sport car that's chasing us will get promoted. Over and out." said Eric,the sport car was being driven violently and was still on the road,no shortcuts, simply following them. New military vehicles followed behind the imposter car and they started shooting at the car then it just swerved and dodged every attack. As the convoy was passing at skyscrapers,ahead of them was Dominic whom was in the armored SUV that they stole from Charozym and the Rover was hanging on the high altitudes of the building on the left side of the road. Eric knew that the wizards planned everything correctly yet he still had the ingenuity to outwit the wizards,he drove the car right into the building and went astray from the convoy,which split into two set of teams. The first set simply diverted from the route and the other set went right with the very route. The armored car launched a few missile of the first set of teams that were dodged. The sport car followed the car driven by Eric which already gained mileage and was clearly in a state of urgency. Following both cars was the teams that were present with reason to destroy the sport car and its driver. Eric drove right into the other side of the road and sped up the car.

" Clearly you have insurance." said a quirky Aquilla.

" Well,right now is not the time to worry about that. These people want you dead and it's time for the division to work." said Eric. The sport car followed right after their exit and its tyres screeched. They kept track of it. The armored SUV was not in the scene anymore,they lost track of it. Following the sport car,Eric's troops followed with their vehicles. This was all revised by Eric a while ago and yet the Rover just leaped off and started to destroy the first set of teams that managed to dodge the SUV's missiles. The chase was on. The sport car was still on route while the miliatry teams fired at the car then there was another explosions and buildings collapsed which Aquilla saw from afar.

" Alright,team,you got to shoot. Aquilla,keep quiet and listen to what I am about to tell you." said Eric.

" Whoa,wait,you can't shoot at him." she replied.

" Aquilla,now is not the time to question my leadership or ideas." he blantly said.

" That is their plan,he wants you fire at him." reasoned Aquilla. The sport car was about to finally reach the car that was driven by Eric whom had to decide to believe in what Aquilla told him now or just dismiss her warning.

" Don't fire at Lucias." he said. Lucias grew mad,reckless even slowed down his car. The chase was still on,Lucias needed to have Aquilla in custody and he had more plans to deploy. The explosions worsened now. Still no sign of what caused them. Choppers arrived on the scene,they were 3 of them. And there were more units after Lucias. It all felt logical for Eric to become very sure of Aquilla's safety.

" Yes! We got air support,send out a few units too. Only God can help Crimson now!" said Eric boastfully.

" Don't count him out. He almost killed Xavier and that's by accident." she said.

Morshower's Public Library
1659 hours

Meanwhile on the other side of Knights Run,there was a long queue at the library to ask for references. Morshower took a brief walk and saw the line. He was frankly baffled,Morshower's wife walked over and she asked what was transpiring.

" There's a line for references." she said sheepishly to Morshower.

" Uh huh. I see it." he said.

" We haven't had a line like that in 25 years." she said. Carlos,a member walked up to the Morshowers and said what actually caused this long queue.

" Good morning,Morshowers. We have a problem." said Carlos. Mr Morshower's first name was Joshua and his wife's name was Elizabeth,the staff was never allowed to speak to them by their first name.

" We see the problem." said Mrs Morshower.

" Yeah,that's because Otto isn't here,Mr Morshower. We can't get a hold of him." said Carlos. Another member of staff just ran to them and had a comment to say,her name was Sue.

" We can't find him,at ALL!" said Sue. Joshua needed to take charge.

" Try to find Otto,I'll deal with the line." simply said Joshua.

Mr Morshower began to deal with the references that people brought and now,he had to help Eva Moore.

" Afternoon,Morshower." she greeted.

" Eva." he said in a cold way,he just attended to her reference and handed over the book she needs. No conversation was helmed by the two,Morshower was still mad and sickened by Eva. She knew why and the reason was compelling enough. Eva tried to speak to him regardless but Morshower hurried to finish up.

" Morshower,I know perhaps I am not your favorite person right now. Probably,it'll be like that for a very long time but I'm sorry for everything." she said to him,Joshua took a few seconds then blatantly replied to her words in a calm and collected manner.

" Get the Hell out of my library,Eva. I care less about your apology because sincerely so,you tried to just destroy this kid's life and books were his only medicine. Not the court orders,not your therapy - the books. You just have to accept that,cutting down the politics that deprive a young black man from reading books,stop him from being with the young lady he admires...and even making enough money in his life." he said to her. Eva was without words,the entire queue listened to what Morshower said to her. They all looked at her,not with resentment but worry.

" Like I said,get the Hell out of my library." said Mr Morshower yet again. Quietly,Eva collected her books from the desk and shyly walked away. She walked to the door and exited. On the first step into the outside world,there was another explosion that rattled her and she didn't move from her exact spot,she just waited and looked to the city,she almost spotted what was causing the destruction.

" Eva! Eva Moore! Finally,I get to meet you." said Hannah whom was slowly walking up the stairs to Eva. The young therapist didn't know who she was.

" Whoa,who are you?" she asked Hannah.

" Call me Hannah and you are going to tell me where Xavier lives or you'll be the one needing therapy." said Hannah,it was all an ultimatum. Eva didn't panic nor scurry,she was a lot more brave that I believed.

" Your threat won't work on me." said Eva. Hannah bluffed then looked at her dead in the eyes. They were having a stare down. They could hear their breathing,that's how tense the atmosphere was yet they weren't sworn enemies prior. Hannah shared a few more words to Eva.

" That wasn't a threat..." said Hannah. There was a gleaming moment that could have allowed peace yet Eva just kept staring at her and waiting to react. She heard metal straining,it was from afar,Hannah's eyes darkened and she lifted Eva using her mind then threw her into the doors of the library. Eva's body went right through the doors and she rolled over in a lifeless state. Eva suffered a concussion from the impact,she was still conscious but fading

away.Hannah slowly walked in,the staff of the library and people whom witnessed this. People rushed to help Eva get up from the attack.

" That was a threat." said Hannah whom was in the premises. Joshua Morshower saw Hannah and he was still in shock of what transpired.

" I'll only say this once - I want Xavier's address,right now." she said to the ground. An answer arrived from a lady within the crowd.

" You already know,it's 11 Fitzgerald Avenue." the stranger said,she would then even show herself to Hannah,it was a neighbor of mine named Agatha.

" Thank you,now,Morshower - I'm going to need this fine establishment." she said in a crude way.

" Who are you?" asked Morshower.

" Careful..." said Hannah then pointed at an injured Eva whom was being helped up.

" She asked the same question." warned Hannah.

" What do you want my library for?" he asked.

" This library will be the ink to write a new chapter for everyone. I'm going to build something and all of you - you will be helping me..." she said to the crowd.

1704 hours

The convoy swerved multiple times around the city,causing havoc due to gun shots and car crashes. The sport car was still intact and the numbers were not narrowed down yet. Eric ran out of patience to capture Lucias. He imploded.

" Somebody needs to get this Crimson kid already!" he said.

" Roger. We will bring the fire." said one of the pilot. A missile was locked to the car and fired at the sport car.

Lucias slowed his car down then turned,the hood faced the missile's routed and Lucias began to drive using reverse. The missile reached him then the Seal on the hood of sport car activated in the smallest touch the missile had,the aircraft that fired the missile exploded while the very missile dematerialized without explanations. Lucias was not harm.

" He is untouchable..." commented Eric.

" He is strategic,no one is untouchable." said Aquilla.

" Any ideas?" asked Eric. Everyone was clueless,speechless since the aircraft was sent into flames.

" The promotion is still on. All units,bury this guy!" commanded Eric.

" No guns. Crash the car. Trust me." said Aquilla.

" Okay,no guns,you got to crash his car...using your cars." said Eric to all of the units,the military vehicles closed in on the distance that Lucias had. He started to worry,the car Eric drove halted then Lucias unknowingly crashed into them. The impact only damaged Lucias' car while Eric's car walked out flawless,without worrying of the damage. The car that Eric drove was impressive,it would chaffeur grand politicians,even celebrities of a high pedigree.

" Do what I just did." commented Eric.

The car drove off while Lucias' car stayed stationary and the military vehicles crashed into him while passing,the collisions were powerful enough to catapult Lucias' car out of the road. It tumbled over and over violently then crashed into a building,this caused a few casualties.

" Sir,we got him." reported a soldier.

" Drag him out there. Subdue his abilities. Wait on the one person who has the kill order." said Eric.

" Kill order?" asked Aquilla.

" Yeah. Kill order." said Eric.

" Lucias is meant to be killed by one person?" asked Aquilla. The soldiers in the car,agreed in different replies.

" Yeah and she's on her way." said Eric then there was radio communication.

" We are taking him out the car,he is already unconscious." said one of the soldiers.

" Alright,we'll drive to the base." said Eric. The radio communication was halted but the car was still being accompanied by the air support. The soldiers were all in position to strike at Lucias should anything arise. He was dragged out of his car then placed on the floor,the always had loaded guns with them. Lucias was not responsive at first,his body wasn't cold and he wasn't breathing. The moment that passed sought no panic,no worrying. They loaded a canister of the vile that halts supernatural abilities and about a quarter of their bullets were made out of that very vile. Lucias opened his eyes and had a smirk on his face. They aimed right at him.

" This is going to hurt you all..." said Lucias. They were ready to shoot at him but it seems that the plot was more intricate then just a few simple spells. The metal from the guns they were holding started dripping. They all looked

at their guns,there was a spell that was weaved by Lucias,it was called "The Fourth Western Sun Cheating Of Death",it made waste out of any firearm aimed at him. This very spell was subjected in the 1880s and 1890s,it was used by gun-slinging wizards mostly and it was adopted by wizards of death. The spell was extremely poisonus,it caught wind of very firearm in the building,the guns didn't vaporize or son on,they were not functioning anymore. Lucias simply got up from the ground,dusted himself and looked around. The soldiers knew that they had a plan too. " I am the wizard of death. Killing me is not going to a walk in the park." he warned them. The soldiers took out swords and had a belt of grenades now.

" Yeah,okay. You are always prepared." he complimented the soldiers' management. They were always silent,didn't show fear,didn't even panic. Lucias had a joke about it.

" Oh,yeah,I almost forgot. This is Knights Run,everybody brawls here,no time for talking." he said. Eric's team just kept quiet yet again.

" Fight!" said a dark voice within Lucias' mind then he shot them with spells,some fell,the others charged at him,Lucias began fighting with his bare hands. He was jabbing and throwing them around,Lucias only subdued them and he would then throw a grenade into a nucleated group of soldiers.

" Give me a fight." he taunted while he was fighting the very soldiers that were being made a waste out of. Lucias threw them into the streets countless times and he'd even use a spell that would flash a bright right at their eyes,temporarily blinding them and he would just punch them. This was no longer an attempt to place Lucias in custody. Lucias was about almost done with the soldiers sent to get rid of him,he then made a call.

" He trashed my car. Trash his for me. I'll get Aquilla." bluntly said Lucias. He hung up and left the very building,walking around the streets of Knights Run,looking for a way to catch up and claim Aquilla. He used a neural link to connect to the Rover which sprinted over to his current whereabouts. I needed to return to Knights Run,it was at war.

" All of this will make the news and then Xavier will try to be the hero. The hero dies,I'll be immortalized." said Lucias and he started to walk with his Rover while walking,the voice of darkness visited him in Germany spoke again.

" This is a pact,I still expect you to bring me Bremagh's palace...or I'll be the real Grim Reaper." it whispered to him. Eric's car was long gone,it was safely tucked in the belly of the city. Deking in a parking lot,Eric devised a new plan. The car just stopped.

" Aquilla,get out of the car." said Eric.

" I knew it,you work for the bad guys..." she said to him.

" What? No! Whoa,wait,you think I would be a traitor,working for Crimson?" asked Eric.

" Well,you have a beard and that idea is bad and it will lead to self-sabotage..." she said.

" That's not enough. I'd have to have intention. Hate you that much...but I don't." he said.

" Well,now I sound naïve." she said. Eric had only one thing to Aquilla,it was all looped into just an idea of why Eric chose to even command this division.

" I am not a god,I don't have powers. I'm just a young man,I pay taxes and bills. I have a wife,she's amazing and understood why I needed to be a soldier. It's 'cause of all of this. This forces me to react,to serve,to protect and to always be above par. It's dangerous,I've seen many of my friends lose their lives but I'm still here and 50 years from now,dead or alive - the world will know that I fought to protect my city. So I'll keep you alive,even if I have to die doing so." he humbly said,Aquilla was speechless,wanted to reply,she didn't need to.

" Now,let's all make a run for it,the base is cut off,they have a spell set to go off when we close. Which was why I am saying this now. It's time to rely on the new plan." said Eric the soldiers agreed then got out of the car,along with Aquilla. There were was a new group of military vehichles that parked. Aquilla was a little eerie about the amount of fire power they had. Conclusive information was present regarding the explosions. The personeel walked out of their car and needed to show the captured footage and images of the reason why the city was sinking - it was a concrete golem that toppled buildings and it was radioactive. The golem was created by Hannah,it was humanoid and it was programmed. The footage was compelling,it was all strategy. Eric just ran numbers,he opted to make a run into the corners of Knights Run.

" Everyone,we will be gaining more numbers in a few hours. Everything escalated,this is now an Alpha Level priority. I just wanna get her to the base. Use the Cruiser 48. Leave to Scotland." said Eric promptly,there was another explosions and then they were all briefed,Aquilla was fitted with a bulletproof vest and a prayer from Kaiser,he was Eric's childhood friend and brother in arms.

" This is surely the worst day of my life..." said Aquilla,troops surrounded her and even handed over Eric more ammunition,maps and a new vehicle since the one he was using would be driven off to distract Lucias. Eric's personal car was brought to the parking lot. It was a vintage car,he spent years fixing it up. It was an important memory in his life,the car twisted fate so that Eric would meet the girl of his dreams whom hitched weeks

prior,hence the silence. To the right mention,Kaiser was now meant to call Clere,his wife. Instead,she called him. He cursed first then answer."

" Yeah,Clere,Clere...I'm still alive,yeah,I know. Yeah,uh huh,great,great. Um,bad signal,hence why I didn't call prior. Yeah,okay,yeah. If I almost die,I'll let you know what flashes in front of my eyes. Yeah,alright. I love you..." he said then hung up,everyone found the conversation really,really weird. Kaiser and Clere's dynamics were childish,clingy despite Kaiser being a well-structured military officer whom had a kill count. Kaiser had one thing to say.

" Your wife is cool..." said Aquilla...

" Thank you,now let's survive the reckoning of the dark side." replied Kaiser then they began to disperse. Eric took his own car,Aquilla sat on the seat besides him. The engine started then they drove again. No signs of Lucias nor Dominic,Eric was cruising simply in the streets,the town was still in panic.

" I know who can help us..." she said.

" Whoa,whoa. No. I am not going to take any more pointers,Aquilla. This car isn't armored,it's just any other car. The idea is to get you out of here." he said.

" Then park the car,you are right,we are meant to walk there. Running is what they wanted us to do." she said.

" I still don't get it..." said Eric.

" The explosions are not to us,they are always near. Lucias had a chance to destroy the car but he never took it. Walking into crowds of the people of Knights Run would lessen the chances of capture. Why? It's because he needs me alive!" said Aquilla.

Chapter 10 - The Knights Run Hero

Aquilla understood the warfare being integrated, she knew how to halt Lucias now. Her symbols began to glow. Another explosion erupted, a debris fell, Eric swerved his car and dodged in time. A beam was seen travelling right in front of them and he had to dodge it. The beam struck the car behind and it went up the skies and into flames. Police sirens were wailing behind Eric's car, it was Cunningham whom just joined them. The detective saluted to them and they would greet back, Eric went to a basement parking. He didn't share a word with Aquilla the navigation.

"Lucias is really after you. He needs you to complete his plans. He needs you alive too." said Eric, making sense of the theory.

"Yes..." agreed Aquilla. Cunningham parked his car then stepped out.

"Lucias also needs the Moon..." said Cunningham.

"We can't stop him, I don't see many of us walking out of this fight alive." said a factual Eric.

"Xavier can stop him..." said the detective.

"He's still nowhere to be found." replied Eric.

"I say we search for him, I'll try to call him again right now!" she said then tried calling, it went to voicemail.

"Can't really take any calls right now, I'm busy trying to save the world." I said on the voicemail.

"Yeah, that's reassuring. Nothing solid though. He is alive, Aquilla's right - we need to find him." said Cunningham.

"And how are we sure that Lucias didn't get to him already?" asked Eric.

"I saw a Chinese lantern..." said Cunningham.

"What does that suppose to mean?!" asked Eric.

"It means we just have to make sure that Lucias doesn't get to us. Sending Aquilla to the military base is a good idea but loitering in the chaotic streets of Knights Run is a better idea." said the detective. Eric sighed.

"You know something, obviously you do. You are a detective, you probably know where Xavier is." said

Eric, Cunningham comically lifted his shoulders. Aquilla laughed right afterwards.

"Okay, great, yeah - our city is being invaded by supernatural mercenaries...and we still have time to laugh." commented Eric.

"Let's go, already. The world needs heroes." said the detective whom had information that could change the complexity of the battle.

Packing guns and an attitude, Eric was walking around the concrete jungle and had a view of a more peaceful part of Knights Run. The cars were not too far away, in true retrospect, their cars were just a block away, simply parked at a near building. Eric feared parking in a basement since the explosions will topple and destroy his car.

"No sign of bad guys here, just simple walking. I got air support." reported Eric to the military base.

"Wait, you are walking? There's three mercenaries around the city whom have targets on all three of you and you are walking?" asked military official Nolan who was waiting for Aquilla at the base.

"Technically Lucias and his team won't kill Aquilla, just me and the detective." clarified Eric.

"With all due respect but you will probably die..." said Nolan.

"If I do, you will be fired, old friend..." warned Eric.

"Kill them all, kill them all, brother." Said Nolan in a banter. The communication concluded.

"I love being the boss..." said Eric.

"Yeah, that's great but we still have a mountain to climb. Getting Aquilla out of the warzone was just the start." said Cunningham. She was awfully quiet, spoke to them however. The trail they traveled in wasn't being terrorized, they kept creeping however and the air support was using the great skyscrapers to travel without being seen. Aquilla looked to the skies, she saw something then it was another explosion.

"Get to a building!" commanded Eric.

"Don't run, just walk." added Cunningham. Aquilla led the way, followed by an armed Cunningham then Eric had to be on the scout around and report.

"I need more choppers circulating around the building that the Ms Rhodes just entered. Also, send a few Alpha squad teams to be at the following location and they are ordered to fire from the co-ordinates only." commanded Eric. Aquilla was still trying to figure what she saw in the sky. Cunningham saw how out of the zone she was, following her and looking out for any hostile forces. There were people still within the building, it was a juggernaut company, a few fled the premises but majority of them were still there. Aquilla was stumbling around, she got tired and less motivated to run. Cunningham walked besides her then stopped her.

" Somebody get water and food for her now!" shouted Cunningham. A few of them attended to what was being asked. They knew Cunningham and they had respect for him. Eric caught up to her.

" Aquilla,are you okay?" asked a frantic Eric.

" She just needs water and some food,her energy is low." said Cunningham.

" I'm fine,just that my markings are acting up,the pain is a lot worse than before." she said then lifted her shirt to her waist to show then the symbols that were glowing. She wasn't bleeding but the pain existed.

" I'll call your folks to help deal with the pain." said Cunningham.

" It's worth the shot." she said while enduring the remotely shrouded pain. The people whom rushed to get food and water arrived,they had sandwiches and fresh pizza. No refreshments arrived yet. Aquilla sat down and started to eat a few slices and sandwiches.

" Here's some water for her to drink..." said a young lad was a few feet away. Aquilla had shock on her face. It was Dominic,he had a smirk on his face and grasped the bottled water. Eric aimed a firearm at him,Aquilla quickly went to her feet. Dominic took another step towards them but carefully.

" Now,I know,I'm one of your decorated bad guy." said Dominic in a boastful tone.

" You are about to be a deceased bad guy..." said Eric.

" You sound sure. Too sure. I'm done with threats,running around this blasted city." replied Dominic.

" Be careful. This city will fight you back." said Cunningham.

" And surely win." added Aquilla. Dominic gave thought to his reply.

" Let me process this. Your only wizard almost got killed and he is missing. The military division meant to protect the hero's girl is miserably failing and I just need to kill two more people then my team wins this game that Green started. Knights Run is actually...worth a dime." said Dominic.

" If it's worth a dime then everything else is free. You just don't get it,kid! This is where all hustles begin and grow. We aren't a bunch of towners who are afraid of bipolar teenagers who pull rabbits out of hats. We will smack you in the face with your deck of cards,we'll saw you in half for real. We will practically bring a war to this fight. We are Knights Run. God's endorsed fighting city. said an eager Cunningham. Dominic had a sour look on his face.

" I'll kill you first,Detective then I'll get Aquilla." said the young wizard then he assembled his Seal using his own life force. Cunningham stood and waited for Dominic to speak up on which spell it is,his contact told him that Dominic rarely used wizardry. Young Dominic was more of a street fighter,he had accolades. He only relied on his spells when he was ordered to or agitated. In this time,Dominic chose to use wizardry - he openly decided on using the craft. Clearly Dominic felt that he had no time to delay.

" Okay,let's run away now." said Aquilla.

" Not yet. Wait." said Cunningham.

" I just that I'll kill you first and you chose to wait?" asked a baffled Dominic.

" Yeah,it's just a wait. In the time that I would have said my last words before being sent to the aftertime,I elected to just wait." said Cunningham.

" I wasn't going to let you say your last words." revealed Dominic.

" Yeah,you need to be more human,Dominic..." declared Eric.

" The wait's over,see you in the next realm!" said Dominic. He fired at Cunningham. The spell struck him,he would collide into the wall. Aquilla was stunned,she only looked to the body falling onto the cold floor.

" Run!" shouted Eric. Aquilla sprinted away,into the building,right to the elevator. Eric shot bullets at Dominic who drank a vile. The vile allowed Dominic to increase his molecular density,making him impeccably indestructible momentarily. The force of the bullets pushed Dominic far away,closely to the edge of the building.

" I know you aren't dead. It's all chemical reasoning." said a serious Eric whom reloaded his rifle and began stepping to Dominic. The street fighter woke up then shot the very spell towards Eric who ran and dodged them,he used the back of the gun's handle and struck him on the nose then he jused punches right to his face. In the revelation,he tried to still fight Dominic. Copper would be punched back and he was hurled feet apart. By now,Aquilla reached the rooftops and air support was ready to collect her. She saw the golem at a distance,it had green eyes and moulded from concrete. Aquilla panted and the chopper landed. The golem wasn't focused on the happenings around Aquilla and so forth,it had its own mission,terrorize my city. The personeel that were on the plane walked to Aquilla and spoke to her.

" Aquilla,we need to take you to the base now." said one of the soldiers whom handed her the parachute,she clinged it with her hands and still felt like she needed to wait on the rooftop.

" No,wait,if I leave this rooftop,many people will die!" she said then something crept closer to us,it was on the adjacent building.

" Lady,get in the helicopter,we got families to take care of." said an annoyed soldier.

" Trust me,if I leave this rooftop,the world will die." she said seriously.

" That sounds poetic really,conscious and all. Still,you got to listen to the orders." said a more insightful soldier.

" No,you all need to listen to what I know." she said then they heard a speeding object that they couldn't see. It was quite vague.

" I thought there were three wizards we had to deal with!" screamed another soldier whom saw the object from afar,it was the very same object Aquilla spotted before she duked to the building. The pilot conveniently walked out of the aircraft and walked besides them,they all stared at him. He explained his reasoning.

" I got to take a leak." explained the pilot. They all laughed chuckled at how humor existed in this perilous adventure. They heard someone stomping to the rooftops using the flight of stairs,there was only one staircase entrance so the soldiers all placed the targets there,they sided Aquilla away. The soldiers awaited for Dominic with guns loaded and it was silent.

" It's time to get everything lit." said the soldier Conrad whom had a grenade then he prepared to throw it to the flight of stairs.

" In fact,we are about to set ablaze our enemies,starting with the steroid-fueled version of Houdini." said Conrad.

" I thought we were refer to him by the other name..." said a soldier in the team.

" Well,calling him "Shitbag" wasn't going to be accepted as a code name." answered Keith. The sounds were closer,no sight of Dominic yet. Conrad decided to throw the grenade now,it had a detonation that could finally get rid of the young wizard. He threw the grenade into the stairs.

" Run faster!" shouted Conrad,the grenade went off. It obliterated the last flight of stairs,they still waited. It was timelessly convincing that Dominic bit the dust. Aquilla was silent,she only waited to see what would happen next. The metal was straining,a debris fell. Dominic ran out to the rooftop using the very destroyed door to the flight of stairs,they started to fire their guns at him,the impact of the bullets pushed him away by a distance but he managed to sprint to the squad and started to fight the soldiers with his bare hands,Aquilla stepped further away. Dominic had ruthless aggression,he was taking on them at once,the bullets were reduced since they believed that a stray bullet can hit and kill Aquilla,Conrad was going above board,kept fighting but the truth was seen - Dominic was clearly more of a danger. Within minutes of the fighting,a lot of the soldiers were groaning on the floor then Dominic struck Conrad,the last one standing,on the jaw and he too fell onto the ground.

" Thanks for the advice..." said Dominic to a fallen Conrad whom was starting to recover. Dominic finally looked towards Aquilla whom was defenceless.

" It is time for you to meet the dark lord,Aquilla..." said a panting Dominic whom had a Seal created and aimed at her,the object was now headed to the trajectory of Aquilla's current location,it was creeping up to Dominic.

" They'll avenge my death..." she said to the wizard,Dominic laughed it off then said something intriguing.

" The plan is to not to kill you..." he said simply,the Seal flashed,a ray began to travel to Aquilla's visage the object was armored,it had an armor,it was an individual and it flew then struck Dominic with a punch on the face when he looked over his shoulder. The energy was dismissed. Aquilla was safe then fell to the ground,crawled away for cover. The individual had an armor that resembled the one Wes had on. It was different,it was better. The individual didn't share a word,Dominic's jaw was bruised and he bled then the armored individual looked around the floor of the rooftop. He noticed that the helicopter had no one. Aquilla was still in shock,the armored being looked to Aquilla. He was calm,he was obviously an ally of Knights Run. Aquilla stood up then had a realization of whom the person might be. Dominic wormed his way back up,he noticed that the jab easily bruised him so he got agitated. Aquilla had one question to ask.

" Who are you?" she asked the armored individual,he did not share a word yet,he took a few steps and was about to take off the helmet then Dominic swung a punch at him from behind,the person's reaction time was so quick that he dodged it then took steps apart then redirected his focus on fighting Dominic,it was surely a brief fight however. Dominic started to taunt the person.

" Yeah,I'm going to school you,Parker." said Dominic,the person just shook his head. Dominic was now lost in the revelations happening.

" Whoa,wait - you aren't Parker!?" Who the Hell are you?!" rudely asked Dominic then the armored hero punched him right on the chest then Dominic crashed into the stationary chopper. Dominic was probably unconscious yet the armored individual still conjured a Seal and awaited for Dominic to try to even awaken from the crash. The Seal had new symbols,it had an energy that was more cosmic. The beam fired and it blasted the chopper and Dominic into the adjacent building. The collision was brutal and the helicopter was hung onto the building,the blast caused the helicopter to actually crashing through until it centers the floor. That really required sheer energy to manage. Dominic's body was lifeless,The armored being could see it lying cold on the dilapidating floor of the establishment that was now in the midst of channeled collateral damage. Dominic was out for some time,injured and shelved too. The soldiers got to their feet and new choppers were in high altitudes. The individual removed his helmet and it was me,Xavier Green. Aquilla ran to me and gave me a hug. I did not see it coming. I was happy to see her.

" You are finally here..." she said to me while hugging it was all emotional.

" We still need to save the world." I said to her then we stopped hugging. The soldiers walked to me,not aiming guns however.

" You,you - who are you?" asked Keith.

" That doesn't matter,just know that I am on your side,everyone." I answered. They were all relieved,I just felt correct to reserve my name.

" The armor you are wearing isn't standard issue,it looks like what God puts on whenever He needs to sleep." said Conrad,I chuckled. Aquilla laughed and she was just dazzled by my new presence.

" Well,surely - there's a lot we still need to do. It's time to regroup." I said.

" Xavier maybe you need to rest,sleep,eat." said a concerned Aquilla.

" I'll be fine. Umi is helping protect the civilians. Milo has got eyes everywhere and we know what they are planning. I only have time to regroup and fight." I explained.

" Wait,when did you even learn how to fly?" she asked. I had a comic moment.

" I only have time to regroup,explain and fight." I rephrased.

Keith had a message sent to him. It was from Eric whom was still on the ground floor of the building and had news.

" Aquilla...the detective is down." said Keith. I grew angry internally.

I was on the first floor,Aquilla was holding my helmet and she started to roll out her tears. Eric sat down and was in silence when I got there. I was not wailing,the eerie pain of seeing my mentor was sheer,it was unfair. I walked to where his cold body was.

" My brother,I'm sorry." I said. I just only worried about Milo and Umi now,how that this could still be their fates. It could be mine.

" He died protecting Aquilla and I..." explained Eric.

" Dominic did this...." added Aquilla. I said no words,the squadron was in our presence now.they took off their hats.

" Xavier,are you alright,man?" asked the pilot,I just nodded in silence. I had a new spell called "Rituals Of The Young - The New Life Of The Death Of A Sun",it was complex.it had a rare occurrence. I learned the spell while I spent days in the palace. I never used the spell before,it was dangerous too. I cleared up the space silently. Aquilla wondered what I was even trying to do. I used wind-type spells to clear the area and then conjured a Seal which I placed onto the ground then it duplicated itself into a copies and they formed a ring,the Seals then drew more lines and new symbols. It was omnious. I was positive,I hoped for the best results. Cunningham's body had to be moved to the center of the Seal. A star had to willingly die for the spell to work. The whole spell relied on faith. Faith in believing that everything will be alright. I went to Cunningham's body then lifted it up,it was getting heavier and heavier by each passing minute. Instead of dragging it,Eric helped lift it up then we placed Cunningham into the center of the joint Seals. We placed him down then we both stepped out of the Seal. I wasn't sharing any words,I was too focused on trying to make the spell work. I cared less about anything in that moment,a new priority was to save my brother. I inhaled then exhaled. My irises lit up a sky blue hue then the Seal began to surge,Aquilla was witnessing all of this happen,her symbols weren't scorching anymore. The joint Seals lit up at once. The hue was the same one that was present in my eyes. They surged then they overcharged,there was a violent flash which wasn't blinding. Keith was nervous while Eric was just looking at the progression of the spell. I was finished with conjuring the spell.

" Now we wait." I said.

" You are trying to revive him,aren't you?" asked Eric. I nodded. My eyes got back to normal.

" Will it work?" asked Aquilla. I nodded yet again. His body was just lying there. Aquilla stood besides me,she held my hand again. We were looking at the joint Seals that sparked again then his body teleported,the Seals were gone too. We heard a car horn outside,it was Yusuf whom I asked to arrive here. He wasn't impatient,was only there for a few minutes.

" Yusuf's here." she said.

" Yeah,we need to get Property Of Carter." I said.

" Wait,we have to go to my home?" she asked.

" Then go to the base. We'll be fine. I need to use it." I said.

" Yeah,getting the book is not going to be really that simple." she said.

" It wouldn't be anything new. I'll explain most of what I know now on the way. I said then had to bid farewell.

" Eric,return to your base,withdraw all of your attacks. The people are safe." I said to them.

"Xavier, there's a huge golem attacking the city, a concrete jaguar laying waste out of the police department." said Eric.

"And you need to listen to me. Get back to the base, regroup. Umi and Milo will be awaiting you all." I said. There was no need to question my delegation, I knew how and why the city was being terrorized.

"Alright, we'll take your orders, Xavier. We have to be a united front or more people will die." said Eric. I nodded held Aquilla by the hand and ran to Yusuf's cab which was patiently parked outside. I opened the door for her. The Apocalypse or not, I always needed to treat her with chivalry.

"Thank you..." she said to me then a message was being shouted to towards us by the very squadron. It was all mandatory.

"We'll need to have a positive ID that it's Milo and Umi." said Conrad.

"One is really weird, the other one is a jerk." I shouted out then the tyres screeched and Yusuf rushed to the Rhodes residents.

Morshower Public Library
1827 hours

People were taken hostage and Lucias was walking all around the shelves, with the Rover keeping a watchful eye at anyone who tried to be a hero. He walked up to a shell-shocked Eva Moore whom was resting and recovering from the assault that was initiated by Hannah. She was sitting alone and looking around. The very tested and overqualified Lucias strutted to her with nothing more than a smirk and good intention. He was right near her.

"May I sit next to you?" he asked her kindly, she just nodded then he sat adjacent to her, with a wince while she wasn't entirely glad to see him.

"I'm sorry for what we are forced to do..." he said to her. She just looked him with resentment. The villain felt rather justified to do all of the devastation in Knights Run. Eva said the relevant and shallow truth. The truth that was ecident to the world.

"No one is forcing you to kill people and destroy our city." coldly said Eva. Lucias scoffed then he spoke of a greater influence that gave words of a revelation. Lucias knew how to make reason of what Eva accused.

"Earth is a cocoon, threads that could make a brand new fabric for a greater world." he said. He showed Eva a new Seal.

"I need to sacrifice this city to see the vision see the light." he added.

"You are sadistic..." commented Eva.

"Xavier is seen as a hero for being a traitor my cause. I commit to saving the world by sacrificing Knights Run and its people and I'm painted the villain. Yeah, the world is sadistic, the world has no neurons." said Lucias then he had a smirk.

"Now, the hero Xavier died and I will live... forever." added Crimson. Eva posed a new question.

"What if Xavier's alive?" asked Eva. The smirk faded. Lucias ran one simple prediction.

"Then a lot of people are going to die." said Lucias in a dead stare. The atmosphere of the room was a lot darker when Lucias said this, the lights even flickered. An echo soared across the room then it was silent again, it even crept out Eva. Lucias showed a smile, concluded their talk.

"Pardon me now. You are a great shrink, Eva but I have to serve my cause now." said Lucias, bidding goodbye to her. Lucias stopped up and went to the area where Gexir's Cradle was. It was not yet weaponized and there were news crews parked and speculating everything. Crimson created more of a news crews presence than at Frankfurt. Lucias walked to the Cradle and Hannah was working on wrapping up everything concerning the preparations for their plan. The basement of the library was occupied by a needed material for their plan and the Moon would be nearest by dawn. Morshower was near them and he was always being asked questions concerning Property Of Carter, questions that soon had him beat. It was a simple and chartered interrogation. They knew where I lived, knew how I would always travel to the library and he also knew how I interacted with people. Hannah did further reading which was all compiled by Morshower, every historic event was connected to Gexir's Cradle. Lucias looked to the Cradle and took note of its power and influence to modern day wizardry. All that was needed was a page from Property Of Carter to be at ease with configuring the artefact. Dominic needed to capture Aquilla and torture her to the point where she would open up about where the book could be. Since I intervened with the plan, Dominic was still worming back to the library, he didn't even know it was even me. Morshower did not have to plead with Lucias, he knew what to say. Lucias was born in Knights Run, he was raised in a family of modest people then he turned heel. His root for wizardry was grief when he lost his grandfather. Years later, there he was, trying to save wizards but kill the humans.

" Your father is a great man." said Morshower. Hannah stopped reading and Lucias would looked to Morshower.

" My father is a limited man. You and him were like brothers." he said with compassion.

" We still are,Lucias. You are good kid. You went through a lot for a young soul but you are still a good kid." said Morshower,Lucias wasn't slipping into an emotional state. The evil from Charozym was lenient enough to let him to have a human side but if it superceeds the cause,Lucias would have to shunned into the mission.

" I am being a better man by doing all of this. This has always been my destiny. I accept it,I work on it. I apologize. This is whom I am meant to be,meant to embrace. A martyr. The alpha and the omega." said Lucias in a bitter.

" And a killer..." added Morshower. Lucias kept quiet and listened to those words sink in. The hostages kept quiet,you'd even hear a pin drop.

" Lucias,he's just being too mediocre to see things the way we do." said Hannah.

" Perhaps she's right,perhaps this is you. All of this power,all of this insightfulness. All of this and you have become your mission. It's not even about money. It's not even about your origins but here's some words a wise man I loop up to once said." introduced Morshower.

" You seriously need to shut up." warned Lucias who began to create a spell that would kill Morshower. The elder still spoke.

" We all have a struggle that haunts us and makes us want to change,but remember - when you change,always change for the better." quoted Morshower. Lucias was moved and a lot more coherent to his human side. Before there was even anything that would happen,Dominic bursted through the doors and had scrapes and bruises. He looked pretty beaten down. There was distress.

" Your vile ran flat?" asked Lucias.

" Nope,I got handed by some new wizard,he wore the same suit that Wes used on us." said Dominic who kept on groaning on his way.

" He sounds like a real piece of work." said Hannah.

" Yeah,I didn't even hear his voice nor understand his mannerism but he knew the girl." said Dominic. Lucias scoffed.

" It'd be logical to believe that it was Xavier in the armor but that's impossible,Xavier died." said Lucias.

" Well,maybe he didn't." said Hannah.

" That's a big 'maybe'." said Lucias.

" Let's say he's alive. Is he that powerful to withstand the force of a deathly spell and a drop from above?" asked Hannah.

" The answer is yes. Something about Xavier was very powerful. The way he weaved spells. The guy could even fly for crying out loud!" said Dominic. Lucias scoffed and had a thought.

" I'd be grateful that the person is Xavier. I need to seriously kill him now. No flukes this time." said Lucias.

" You are inviting war,Lucias." said Dominic.

" It won't be war if he surrenders." commented Lucias and the young wizard went back to working on the cradle. Hannah had few words that she didn't have to say,she was conflicted but not naïve. In her eyes,I was the victim,I needed to be freed. She felt that she developed affections over me during the eerie and darkened time. She saw past being platonic. This would make her believe that Lucias' mercy was enough for a truce for my sake before I catch my dying breath.

" Yeah,you are right but whatever happens,I'm out. I'm quitting everything regarding wizardry. Start a new life." said Dominic. Lucias went up to him and offered him to shake his and they shook to the news,agreeing and wishing each other well with whatever will happen in the pursuit for power.

25 Columbus Road
1901 hours

Yusuf was parked,Aquilla and I had to sneak into the house without being heard,we didn't even use the secret entrance that was always there. When we walked in,Aquilla's parents were already waiting for us.

" Shit..." I said.

" Good evening to you too,Xavier." said Bertram.

" Wait,no,I didn't even mean it like that,Sir." I said.

" Those could be your last words." warned Bertram.

" Mum,Dad got his gun license back?" asked Aquilla.

" Yes,my little one." answered Allegra in a warm way.

" Wait,you never mentioned that your father is a G.I. Joe." I said.

" Enough. I'm just going to have to put my foot down. Aquilla,go off to bed." said Bertram.

" No." answered Aquilla.

" Wait,no?" asked Bertram.

" Let me try. Aquilla,go off to bed,we need to scare off Xavier." said Allegra in a sweet yet partially demented voice.

" Yeah,I reckon that this is all a big prank." I said then I heard a growl.

" No. Mum,Dad,I love you so much but I need to live up to my values." she said.

" Is bring a mercenary home one of your values? Or even dating the guy who is the reason why your hometown is under attack?" asked Bertram. Then I heard a thud.

" I know that loving unconditionally is. That outweighs all of that. Yes,I know that there's politics over who is meant to admit feelings. There's vulnerability when a girl admits that she loves a boy and there's so much uncredited fears when a boy cares so much about a girl. It's life. Yet I don't care about how overwhelming things are. I don't care if Xavier can create spells or how many times he was beat by this cruel world. Point is...I love him." confessed Aquilla. I cleared up my throat and held her hand. Aquilla's parents were beyondly moved and impressed.

" I love your daughter and I will do right by her." I simply said then saw that the room got colder. By colder,I don't mean numb human emotions - it was freezing again.

" Well,then young man,I don't know what to say. I have been with my daughter since her first gasp of breath,I know her more than anyone will ever do. She's certain about you." said Bertram.

" I understand how you fear my ideals since my future is in fact still yet to be seen but speak my family. I know how I was always so mad at my parents this entire time but I started to understand,through your daughter,that family means everything." I said then handed over my phone to Allegra.

" How does this prove anything?" asked Allegra.

" Just talk to them first,Ma'am." I said. Allegra would look at the device and keep it.

" Wait,you have pockets in your armor?" asked Aquilla.

" Yeah,there are really cool. The pockets started off as a dare then they could actually save my life." I said.

" They are just pockets." said Bertram.

" They are also escape hatches. See,there's a fail switch that will separate me from the armor and teleport me safely to Hiatus,it's an island." I explained. I knew how there was another growl that originated from Aquilla's room. I told them not to make a sound and I started to creep to her. The family gradually followed behind me. I conjured a basic Elemental defence spell and made my way to her room. On the hallways to her room,I saw fur,I picked up a strand then it was freezing. I was rather baffled.

" What the?" I whispered to myself then I heard a snarl. The Rhodes were a few paces away from me and I looked to them and signaled that they still keep quiet. Bertram was in more panic then Allegra,I was inclined to ask. Aquilla beat me to it.

" Dad,are you scared?" asked Aquilla in a whisper.

" I didn't repent all of my sins and I'll probably die." he said whispering too.

" No one is going to die!" I said in a louder whisper. I heard sounds of sniffing. I duked down and walked to the room. I took my first peep and saw a tail that was whisking around then I stopped peeping. I had a new question for Aquilla.

" Aquilla,tell me...where exactly is the book hidden in your room?" I asked.

" It's not hidden. The pages of the book are on the walls." she answered.

" Wait,what do you mean on the walls?" I asked.

" They stuck themselves onto the walls. That's it." she explained. Bertram had a question to ask.

" What's in the room?" he asked.

" I don't have a positive ID on whatever is in the room." I said.

" It's probably a cat burglar." said Bertram.

" I'm starting to believe that you don't have a gun." I said. I peeped quickly and could spot paws.

" It's a wild animal. Probably a coyote." I said.

" Xavier,a wild animal is still dangerous." said Allegra.

" Don't worry,I'll just have to sedate it then we can release it to the wild." I said.

" Have a spell for that?" asked Aquilla.

" I think I have vile that can help." I said then I gave it to Bertram.

" You and I need to do this,I'll hold down the animal and you need to drop three droplets into its mouth then it'll sleep." I said.

" Whoa,whoa..." said a frightened Bertram.

" No,no,no. We have to do this. Let's go." I said then slowly peeped. The animal was looking at the door and saw me. It didn't move nor growl,just blinked. It took note of me.

" Xavier,what's going on?" asked Bertram. I duked back.

" It saw me." I said.

Chapter 11 - The Rise Of Milo Washington

I went to my feet and walked into the door. It was a husky. It was rather full-grown and it was not even hostile. It was just looking at me. The eyes of the husky were sky blue and this was very well the same husky I could a glimpse of at the Giant's Stub. I walked in, the beast didn't even growl or show its fangs. The symbols on my armor lit up in blue. The husky had a tag around it. The tag was made for the same steel as my armor. Aquilla overlapped her father then stood up and walked into the room. She was in shock then her heart sank. The husky was looking around the walls and it was no ordinary husky, wizardry was in its genepool. It had characteristics of a more evolved breed. The walls had pages of the book. The husky went to my palm sat down and waited. I reached out my hand, the lights started flickering. Aquilla looked around her and then the pages from started to peel off. The back hardcover of the book placed itself on my opened palm then the pages arranged themselves into their original state. No spells, just the need to gather education is what caused this. The husky wagged its tail while Aquilla would see the spectacle. Within mere minutes, the Property Of Carter was restored. The lights return to normal and the husky was right next to me. I held the book and patted the canine.

"Let's go." I said to Aquilla, grabbed her by the hand and we walked out together, the husky followed with Bertram was stunned when the husky passed by him that he even dropped the vile and the beaker broke.

"You know, for a date night, all of this was exciting..." said Allegra.

Knights Run
2101 hours

The military base in the outskirts of my hometown had to deal with the pending devastation. Milo and Umi were with the soldiers and were given pardons to speak and help with the army. They were given time to inspect their drones and weapons, giving suggestions and so forth. At first, guns were aimed at them then they had to conjure a joint spell which showcases that they are allies and they work with me. Milo finally had to call everyone in.

"Everyone, everyone. I need everyone here." shouted Milo.

"Uh, sir, you can use the intercom to call them." kindly suggested a soldier whom was still intimidated by the wizards.

"Well, anything works. Umi can round them up too." he said. The soldiers rolled to Milo's exact location in great numbers. They had a firearm with them always. Eric stood near Milo and he was still in charge of the army. Umi slid down and gave Milo an update on my whereabouts.

"Xavier will be here very soon." she notified him.

"Great, finally we can read the book." said Milo.

"He always said that we need to have dog food ready when he gets here with Aquilla." she added. Milo sighed.

"Xavier brought his St Bernard to a war. Classic." said Milo. Eric had something to say while every soldier was still running to the place of the meeting.

"This book you are talking about, it started this war." said Eric with a sense of seriousness.

"It'll also end this war." reassured Milo.

"I sure hope so. For all our sakes." expressed Eric. The soldiers were all there. Milo continued.

"Alright, is everyone here? Use the buddy system." he said.

"If you don't see your buddy, raise your hand." said Umi. Hands weren't raised.

"If you have a 20-year-old little brother here, raise your hand." said Umi again. Some of the marines raised their hands.

"Um, Umi... what does that have to even do with the mission?" asked Milo.

"Say what now?" she asked.

"You know, never mind, never mind. Let's get right to it, people." said Milo who had to explain everything. Eric was very attentive, he was taking note of everything.

"The person you are dealing with is called Lucias Crimson. He's a 25-year-old wizard of death and he created a collective of wizards which Umi and I used to be a part of." explained Milo.

"We left the collective because of Xavier, he made us see the light." added Umi.

"The light?" asked Kaiser.

"Xavier reminded us that we can use wizardry to better the world, be heroes." said Milo.

"What's Lucias really planning?" asked Conrad.

"A new Earth." answered Milo. Yusuf's taxi parked and I stepped out with Aquilla, the husky and the Property Of Carter. The taxi driver would stay in the car and complete his crossword.

" Go well,Mr Green and Ms Rhodes." said Yusuf.

" Thank you,Yusuf. Hopefully we'll all stay alive." I said. We rushed into the space where the meeting was helmed.

" Good evening,everybody." I said,bursting into the meeting.

" Finally,you made it,brother." said Milo. I floated above the crowd,swirled once and then landed besides Umi. I winked at Aquilla,she blushed then I could hand over the Property Of Carter to Milo. He held the book,skimmed through the pages and verified if it was truly the book that they hunted for.

" This is the real book. Xavier,Lucias would kill to get his hands on it." said Milo.

" That's the thing,he still thinks that I am dead. Meaning that he believes that the book is probably held captive by the collected governments. Meaning that I have the element of surprise." I said.

" I'm afraid it's actually an escalated fight. Lucias has hostages held in Morshower's Public Library. They are 95 people." notified Milo.

" That's a lot of people." I said.

" He won't hesitate to kill each of them." said Milo.

" Whoa,wait,7 billion lives verses 95 people? That is still a heavy decision to make. It's not even our decision to make." I said The husky sat down,looked around Aquilla patiently listening. I looked around,everyone in the room was ready,they held a gun or a look of wanting to help.

" I have a great plan." I said. Umi intervened.

" Shit,no. No. Your plans are too insane." said Umi.

" Yeah but this one plays with the theme of knowledge. Lucias has never touched the real Maxima,read about it but nevery touched it. We generate a clone. Hand it to him." I said.

" It won't work. We need a more solid plan." said Milo.

" Let's run Plan 47." I said bravely.

" You really want to get us killed." openly said Umi.

" What's Plan 47?" asked Eric.

" A living death trap." said Milo.

" About 95% of us will be in body bags." said Umi.

" It sounds too dangerous." commented Conrad.

" Dangerous but it can work and everybody can go home alive." I said. Aquilla stood up and walked amongst the crowd,the husky followed with. She voiced something simple.

" Plan 47 is not just risky,it's a stable plan that Xavier created at Bremagh's Palace. The plan isn't much of a plan. It's like a creative way to die." emphasized Milo.

" Now you are exaggerating,Plan 47 has escape routes if it doesn't materialize well." I reasoned.

" Okay,point taken." said Umi.

" Plan 47 is effective when we are coherent to the cause." I said.

" Alright,alright. I agree with running Plan 47." said Milo.

" I am in on the plan too." said Aquilla.

" Alright,this will be an epic date for us." I agreed. Everyone stopped speaking.

" Yeah,I know,she's my girlfriend." I explained. Milo took note of the husky,he noticed that it wasn't a mere animal.

" Umi,look." whispered Milo. She saw the animal,it wasn't even scared. The husky walked up to them.

" Now,people,I have the blueprints right here,take one,divide into six teams." I said then I handed over the briefs of the plan,they began to disperse. Eric sat down and started to read the plan on the very spot. He too saw the husky and stopped reading. The husky's presence was not evil,rather very,very ignited. It breathed out cold air and its snout was perfectly shaped. The paws had markings and on its coat,there were patterns that were quite nostalgic to look into. Aquilla and I had a brief conversation about the settings of Plan 47,I handed over the medallion to her,it was a safety measure for her,we spoke in whispers.

" You need this in case if Plan 47 falls apart." I said,she denied it.

" Keep it,I'm not going to leave Knights Run in this time of need." she said.

" I'm trying to help. I care about you." I said.

" And I care about you too. Which is why I'm here,whether your plan fails or succeeds." she said. This made me realize how things were going to look up. We had a pending fight but that's all that I had to clear out. Institutions and the works would still be nothing more than a stress. Truth is,I had nothing much figured out,my soul was powerful and my life was still a hurricane. I was just anchored by Aquilla. I appreciated the time I was spending that time even if I knew how those could be my last days alive.

" Thank you,for everything." I said to her,I was finally beginning to believe that I'd die in this fight. Milo was still looking at the husky.

" Xavier,this isn't an ordinary husky." said Milo.

" I know. It's obviously under an array of spells." I said.

" No,no. There's more to this husky. Let's round up the teams,work on the plan first. I'll find out what's going on with this husky soon." he said. The husky wasn't scared and it was attentive to me. It was like it was my pet dog.

25 Columbus Road
2307 hours

Back at Aquilla's home,guests arrived. They had luggages,Bertram helped carry them in. He was already conversing with the family. The family had twin sons whom were about to turn 15 in a few months. The father was middle aged and the mother was fair in complexion. Their last name was Green. This was my family. The Rhodes asked for them to swing by to their humble home. They were in their manor and they were impressed. My parents looked around the house while my little brothers kept asking for video games and food. They were settled in then Bertram spoke. He said something simple.

" I met your son. It was the same day that he met my daughter. They fell in love." he simply said. My father shared no words,merely listened to his point.

" Look,I know,we are in a war. We are trying to stay alive but when they make it out alive,they deserve a chance to be happy." said an optimistic Allegra. My parents wanted to finally say something to the Rhodes.

" Your daughter saved my son's life. Now,they are out there,saving our city. We are going to have amazing grandchildren." said my father.

" Shit,that escalated quickly. But I guess that the Rhodes and the Greens are now united." said Bertram. Aquilla's parents offered alcohol to my parents in the medium of the beer.

" I'm the designated driver." said my father. They placed the alcohol down.

" Yeah,plus they'll be wreckage tomorrow." said Allegra.

" We all need to pray for our children." said my mother. They all nodded.

" We have a bunker at the basement if all else fails. Let's just hope that they don't fail. No pressure." said Bertram.

" You are all good people." said my father.

Knights Run
2347

At the base,Milo ran to me,with the book opened. I was sitting down,working on the gauntlets of my armor. He simply outburst a finding.

" The husky is an Elemental." he said in a hurry then handed over a book.

" Whoa,whoa,Elemental?" I asked.

" Yeah,Elementals are animals born from one of the four elements. They have been existing since the beginning of life." he explained.

" That's a good thing,right? Wait,nope it isn't." I said.

" You didn't even read the book." he said.

" I didn't have to." I said to him. Umi walked to us. She had a clipboard.

" Your death trap is ready." she said,notifying me that the arrangements and the delegations for Plan 47 were complete. I was still in shock since I took note of how things panned out.

" He's nervous too." she said as I kept quiet.

" Yeah,I need to tell you something,it's probably a hunch of what could happen in the near future." I said then the television was switched on. We looked to it.

" You need to watch this." said Eric whom said to the crowd. It was a news channel. The channel brought coverage of a press conference that was helmed by the villainous Lucias Crimson. He had the entire world on his hand and he only needed a key to topple it. The young wizard was arrogant. He had words to share. It was a momentous night. He started speaking.

" Thank you for gathering here and I sincerely hope that you all finally understand our cause. Wizards have been existing since the beginning of the human race. We have helped civilization survive through those ages,survive great struggles and shaped modern society. Yet we had to live in the shadows. Wizards have been treated unfair,kicked down on and they have subjected to millenia of being knocked down by governments. Made it all to seem like a suicide of a great race. This has all being seen throughout history. Now,we are disconnected,we are dying. I decided to be the savior of all wizards. I have my team to help and only one more puzzle is needed. The

Property Of Carter. Now,world,you might reckon my threats are clearly just,threats. I think I need to have somewhat,testimonies of my actions..." said the very presidential Lucias. The footages from previous missions were shown onto the screens. The footages showcased how well-trained and organized. Spells were used and the brute Dominic had moments where he threw soldiers across. There were shots of Milo helping plan too. The footage would show the loots they would steal in every raid. How many headlines they made. The world finally knew about wizards. We existed in great numbers and The Dark Side Of The Moon could be a home for every one of us. Lucias offered a sanctuary by sacrificing the humans and any allies that would fight for them. The footage was not lengthy,it was meant to solidify the idea of how dangerous wizards are. The footage ended with scenes of me falling off Purgatory International,taunting my city. Lucias would then continue his grand speech.

" Now,this all took away your son and now we still have 95 . This war will get more people killed and we will surely still win. This is always a message to any wizards that pity the humans and try to stop us - we will kill you. Now,all of your politicians,you hypocrites,scramble your ideas,your histories. Fly your planes,search each home. Turn each rock. Resort to violence. Obliterate the conspiracies. Rattle out the truth and give me the Property of Carter. You have ten hours." said Lucias. I switched off the television,no one argued with my action.

" Lucias thinks that humanity will bow down and kill itself. He's wrong." I said.

" You are using anger to fuel your energy. People's lives are affected." said Eric.

" This isn't anger. It isn't even negative. Wizardry is a hustle now. It's meant to built dreams. It's no different from writing." I said.

" We are dealing with murderers here...who just made a serious threat to the world." said Conrad.

" Writers topple worlds,they live up to threats." commented Aquilla.

" Wizards are writers. Unsung gods. The thing is,they just ran out of ink,they will settle blood but with the right guidance." I said.

" By that,you mean your guidance." criticized Keith.

" No. The right guidance. It has no name. We can stop them. The first step was to pardon my friends Umi and Milo. The second step was to commit to Plan 47. The next right step would to have secrecy,we can't let the world or governments know that we have the book. The final step is to defeat Lucias on our own." I said.

" Mr Xavier Green,you are one influential individual." complimented Umi.

" You heard the man. It's time to time to fight." said Milo.

" "This isn't going be easy,we already lost a valuable soldier." reminded Eric.

" Yeah,I know but you have a god who believes in God." I said. The soliders were done now,ready for new orders.

" Alright,people,we will go mobile. The wizards,our wizards - will need give them to prepare." said Eric.

" I actually need to call the library." I said.

" No,wait,I'll call the library." said Milo. This escalated in a tug of war and an unneeded debate on who should call and speak to Lucias. Asking for a trade of all hostages snce we could give him a book. The plan had that piece missing. We could allow Eric to call but he wouldn't be in right complexity for such a deal. Eric also never spoke to Lucias before,the young revolt was swirling around in the darkness meaning that Eric would need to tread lightly. These factors got him ruled out to call. Aquilla could call but she opted not to. Umi was the right person to call but she argued on how her involvement in the plan needs to be shaded for now. This all placed Milo and I to be the only remaining candidates.

" I'll call the library." I said.

" I'll call the library." said Milo.

" I'll call the library. It's my hometown." I reasoned.

" I'll call the library,I started the mess." said Milo.

" I'll call the library,I am funnier." I said.

" Whoa,wait - how is that a reason?" asked Umi.

" I see what his reason is." said Aquilla.

" I'll call the library,I am graduated." he said.

" Fair shot,I'll call the library becayse I am the son of Bremagh." I said.

" Whoa,wait,who is Bremagh?" asked Aquilla.

" He is my father and he helped create Earth." I said.

" That's your dad?!" asked Aquilla.

" Yeah. The blue being that was at your pool that very night when you and I were alone at your house." I said. She just kept silent and had questions.

" Are you human?" she asked.

" Ye,I am but my soul is the soul of Bremagh and his wife's son. It's all a long story but I am human,I do get scrapped,I can't live forever." I explained. She nodded.

" I know,keeper,right?" comically said Umi then she bumped a stiff Aquilla with her right elbow,this did not make things any easier. Aquilla smiled however,she wasn't mad,just found it nostalgic to always learn something new about me and I learned something new about her. While all of this happened,Milo was dialling a number.

" What are you doing?" I asked.

" I'm calling up the Grim Reaper who wears jeans." said Milo. I tried fighting over the phone with him then it was ringing.

" We still didn't decide on it." I said while fighting over for the phone.

" I said I'll do it." said Milo,there was no answer yet. Umi sighed.

" Boys." she said then conjured a spell to the phone,it was enchanted. Milo and I were actually still fighting over to see who will use the phone. The call kept ringing,I tried punching him in the nose,Milo caught the jab. I resulted in kicking him the shin,the call kept ringing. Milo managed to punch me right in the face. Everyone was a little baffled by why Milo and I were even fighting. It was a comic fight,nothing violent or gritty. The call wasn't answered still in this mayhem that Milo and I started. I punched him in the jaw,he swirled around once and punched me right back. The moment reached to the point where I conjured a spell and Milo conjured a spell. I had the phone,Milo was in a stalemate then someone answered the call.

" Morshower's Public Library,this is Hannah speaking." the voice said. I placed it on my ear and started conversing.

" I want to offer a trade for the hostages." I said. My voice was distorted on the other side of the call,it was because of Umi's spell. They couldn't know that it is really me.

" I'm listening." she replied after a short passing time.

" I have the Property Of Carter. I can prove it. Now,I need to trade it to you all and you'll let the people of Knights Run go." I said.

" That's what we want. You'll hopefully witness the birth of a new world. Not a lot of humans will." she said.

" Yeah,well,what can heroes do at this point in time?" I asked.

" We are the heroes. We chose to sacrifice a race for the sake of the universe." said Hannah.

" Heroes save everything and sacrifice themselves. Just food for thought. I'll have your book ready in a few hours." I said then hung up. Hannah had some thoughts,a part of her felt that it was really me over the phone. After hanging up,I got tackled by Milo and I would plummet to the ground. Umi and Aquilla applauded the tackle. I groaned and Milo would just walk to them. The fight was over and now we had to defend Knights Run in a few hours.

Knights Run
0701 hours

We witnessed a Knights Run sunrise. I was on the hood of Yusuf's taxi,my arms where wrapped around Aquilla and we were savoring the moment. Not much words were shared and we only slept for 4 hours,I didn't have nightmares,I was just not in the residing feeling of sleep. I was going through insomnia again. Aquilla saw worry in my eyes,she wanted to ask if I doubt myself and the answer would be no. I didn't have doubt,I had something a lot worse going through my mind. I was about to lead people into a fight I started,I was about to avenge Cunningham whom passed on for this cause. I was told that I am a god now,I was only called a drop-out,I was always trying to transition into a better life. A life that would see me become intellectual and help millions. I made a pact with myself,I wanted to remain sanctified and yet in that moment,I shared a moment of the sun rising with someone who saw more to me,help grow me and knew how to navigate around the dark side of the Moon. A thought flashed in my mind that this could be the last sunset I ever see. Death had no exceptions.

" The scenery is beautiful..." she said.

" It's timeless too. It never grows old." I said.

" Well,what can we say - it's beyond amazing,Xavier." she said.

" I just can't believe that Yusuf would let us sit on his taxi." I said to her. She chuckled.

" Yeah,he's a great man. He started by driving you after an injury and now,he has to drive you into a war." she said.

" Time slipped away..." I said.

" Our time on this Earth could be done now." she said.

" I know how scary all of this but after it passes - we should do what we both planned that night." I said to her. She exhaled sharply.

" That would be a crazy life." she said.

" We are already live in a crazy life. We have a husky,three people whom want to kill us all." I said,I had a list of reasons.

" Alright,you made a few interesting points and from the concussion you got when Milo tackled you is not clearly affecting you so let's go on with our own plan after all of this." she said,agreeing to my proposal.

" Yeah,we just need to stay alive for the next four hours." I said. Milo teleported right in front of us.

" We got to go,people." said Milo.

" Thank you,Milo." I said then Aquilla and I got off the hood of the car. We were going to deploy Plan 47 against Lucias and it was going to either succeed or the human race would die. While we were about to leave the base,Eric handed over the keys to his first car to me.

" Please,take care of my car." he kindly said. We finally left the base. The cars and tanks were traveling at normal speeds. I did not have my armor on when I was traveling in one of the designated vehicles. The plot of my plan was surrounded by simple concepts of timing,resilience,patience and also important spells. The first wave of defence would simply let Lucias think he won by handing him the book.

Morshower's Public Library
0918 hours

" The reactor's ready." notified Dominic whom was reading the energy levels of the device. The energy they used was extremely charged,it had power and it was stolen months before.

" Still no solid leads on the book and governments are offering us more money and pardons." she said,Lucias scoffed.

" We will not accept their money." said Lucias.

" I'm a little worried,what if the energy spikes again?" asked Dominic.

" We'll send away 10 percent into a distant trajectory. We can shed only that amount of power." said Lucias.

" And what if we can't get the book?" asked Hannah.

" We'll use the golem and the Rover to create havoc. We'll turn their world into a pinyata. They'll be forced to oblige and give up the book. I didn't even mention that I'll torture all of the hostages." he said.

" You sound darker than usual." said Dominic,Lucias briefly scoffed.

" Let's say that I deserve a win." he answered. The hostages peeped out to the outside world then they saw military vehicles appear blocks away. Their sirens were wailing and they were swerving in the broken roads.

" Finally..." said Lucias.

The tires of the cars screeched and halted a few yards from the steps of the library,Lucias walked out of the establishment with a smirk on his face. Hannah walked out with him,she had a Seal ready as an emergency measure. The giant golem would awaken then be in plain sight just to remind us how they were in control of the situation. The vehicles were already in the formation for Plan 47,Lucias knew nothing about the plan,knew nothing about the heights it reached and knew nothing about the risks involved with the plan. Lucias was walking down the stairs. No one even wanted to step out of their vehicles then he heard footsteps in the midst of the military cars. The footsteps were heavy,they were steps taken by one person. Lucias spotted the person and waited for the person to reach and hand over The Property Of Carter. My person helmed the armor I used. No words were said. It could be me,it could be Umi,it could even be Bertram. They were blindly agreeing to trade. The armored ally would finally shake hands with Lucias,the man whom wanted to evolve civilization. A plan that was well thought off and needed a darker resurrection,a plan that needed to work for the sake of the rebel wizards.

" Finally,I meet the man who will let wizards triumphant." said Lucias. This surely wasn't Wes Parker. The person in the armor was a wizard however. Lucias tried studying the mannerisms,the walking,the attitude. It was all default. It could be anyone. He felt that it was an outsider,a wizard whom had been awaiting a breakthrough. The helmet was enchanted,temporarily however so that it could distort the voice,meaning that conversing with the person would not help Lucias gain a lead.

" Now,the book." said Lucias,demanding the Holy Grail to be in his possession. He stretched out his hand to receive it. The armored person blindly gave him the book to Lucias. He used a Seal to verify and see if it was truly the book,it was. He paged through it and chuckled. He was beyond ecstatic,he finally could finish the deed and leave billions dead. It seemed insane,Crimson anchored legitimacy to the cause. Wizards were superior and they were the future of the human race.

" Now,I can finally free the hostages..." he said. Then the people started walking out of the library,there were only 45 people that were set free.

" Now,the remaing people will be set free when I am safely in the library. I'm a man of my word. Yet you don't even say a single word." said Lucias. The soldiers stepped out of their vehicles and they were safely welcoming the freed hostages. This could be a way of saying how we failed the world by letting Lucias have the book,the truth is...we were gambling with our rock. Lucias turned away then started to walk to the library. He had an aura around him that the crowd of fleeing people were not imposing. He only took a few paces,Hannah walked next to him,paged through to the spell,Hannah looked over her shouler the armored person was quiet.

" Now." said Eric over the radio connection then the person reached out his hand in the trajectory of Lucias. Hannah waited for the person to conjure a Seal. Hannah stopped walking and waited on what the person would do. He said no words said still the soldiers walked to him with cases that could be part of the plan then Lucias looked at Hannah. " What's wrong?" he asked her then the armored person didn't even conjure,he just snapped his right fingers. The book vibrated. That's all then it teleported away from Lucias' grips. In its place was a piglet. The book was in the possession of the armored person whom managed to elevate the plan. Lucias saw the piglet,he was digusted and the person chuckled. Hannah tried shooting a beam at the person but the beam reflected and she was struck by her own abilities. She hurled away and scraped herself. The book was also enchanted. Any direct Seal used that would threaten the book and its host will be fired back and inflict greater damage. Lucias decided to introduce violence, he took a dagger and started running to him with it. The person ran to him then placed the book in front of him then he was hurled away into the a distance too. The Rover roared and stood behind him. The soldiers were still prompt,Lucias fractured a rib in the fall. The armored person snapped his right fingers again then his body was cloaked with cotton. It shed away and finally Lucias could finally see whom was the person who donned the armor. It was none other than Milo Washington himself who started laughing. Lucias got to his feet.

" Milo! You are with them?!" he asked his former ally. Milo chuckled then he knew that he didn't need to explain why he would side with the humans.

" Yeah,even though my 100 days aren't up but I felt like this was needed. Plus you are a shitbag,narcissist and you killed Xavier Green." said Milo.

" I'll offer you a truce if you simply give up and rejoin our side." he said. Milo looked around,clched his book and recalled my words that I told him when we were sparring at the palace a while ago.

" No. I'm going to chill on their side. It has everything. Humility and so forth. So I'll give you a chance to not get killed." said Milo. Lucias just laughed.

" In a few minutes,you'll be dead in the ground and I'll have the book." said Crimson. The soldiers in the cars were now ready for the next phase of the place.

" Again,in a few minutes,you'll have a concussion." said Milo. Umi spoke to Milo using the secured mental connection we have that was successful courtesy of the Vulcan Wire.

" The plan is working. Now you need to save the other hostages." said Umi.

" I have always had a Plan B,old friend. If I can't create a new world - I'll destroy this one." said Lucias with a smirk. Milo snapped his fingers 10 times then soldiers were being teleported to the library while the hostages were teleported into the very spots that the soldiers where in. Hannah was up in her feet and commanded the golem to hit the ground in their direction,causing a quake that could tumble their military cars over. It hoisted its right arm up in the air.

" Plan a way to stop this,Washington." said Hannah then an energy beam was fired at the right collar bone of the golem and it the entire arm of the concrete giant. It showed no emotions,the cars made way for me to fly right next to my new brethren Milo. I was flying at high velocity,I helmed the armor and then I halted and landed gently right next to Milo and the soldiers.

" I didn't have a plan but my armored brother did." said Milo. Lucias was still relaxed. The soldiers that were still quiet and awaiting for their orders. Dominic walked out of the library room,something more sinister was guarding the doors of the library that any of us were not trained for. The brute stood next to Crimson and Johnson. Now all of the villains were there and we needed one more person for the fight to break out. Umi used the art of parkour to navigate to the library then she landed on her feet,right besides Milo.

" Yeah,we can have a brawl now." said the Reality wizard.

" You should know that the energy capsule will become more and more unstable every passing minute? And soon enough,not even Seals can stop the nuclear power from exploding." said Lucias,this was a warning that we need to fight and win or everyone in Knights Run will die. If we let them win,only wizards will live and reign and there was no truce to be spoken of. We still had a mental link.

" Umi,you can still be on our side..." said Dominic.

" I made my choice." said Umi.

" Now,let fight of the century - begin!" declared Crimson. I ran to them with Milo and Umi. Lucias quickly whispered a few words to the Rover using his native language then the monster ran to us.

" Now. Umi!" shouted Milo.

" 3rd Smokescreen!" she shouted then a Seal appeared which she used to blind the Rover and it steered out of control. I took flight then tackled Dominic. Hannah ran to Umi then jabbed her. Milo used a running knee on Lucias' jaw and the wizard of death was hurled away. I began fighting with Dominic and the wizard punched me a few times then dragged me by my ankle and threw me up into the skies. The military men intervened and started shooting at Dominic. Milo snapped his fingers again then the book was sent away then a sword and shield was in his possession. Lucias' Rover regained sight. I managed to regain my flying posture and scouted around the city from above. The Rover saw me then mechanically shapeshift into a large eagle then took to the skies to tackle me. I had visual on the golem which I could finally retire. Umi tumbled over and stood up with Hannah give her a chance to. " This is surely too easy for me,give up." said an arrogant Hannah. Umi was never physically trained to actually manage adversaries like Hannah. Umi was not frail,she was more of a portion maker hence why she always had viles.

" Like the same way you gave up without trying to save your little brother that night?" asked Umi. It was an insensitive taunt. Dominic dealt with the military aid,fought the soldiers with his bare hands and cracked skulls. This was a fight to humanity,the fight of the century.

Chapter 12 - Power,Influence

Milo and Lucias were throwing jabs and using serious spells to try to kill each other. Milo kept deflecting using his shield and he would throw punches at him. The taunt that Umi said to Hannah was offensive,insensitive yet it didn't make Hannah enter the Realm Of Thieves. Hannah just kept quiet then ran to her and struck her with her left elbow. This didn't break Umi's nose nor nose bridge,she laughed when she fell. Umi was calculating.

" Yeah,that's not bad but watch this." said Umi then she snapped her fingers then a wizard landmine went off near Hannah. It exploded then she was sent away,it seemed like she was knocked out cold when her head hit the ground. Umi stood up and notified Milo and I about what developed.

" Guys,Hannah is out cold for now. I need to move into the library,help save the remaining hostages and try to somehow use Wizardry to stabilize the capsule." she said in the mental connection. I nodded.

" Got it." said Milo as a reply. Lucias was somehow impressed with Milo's fighting skills,the young wizard learned a handful of ways to fight back. There was a stalemate between the two fighters and even Lucias called it in. They stopped fighting briefly. I conjured a Seal and I could fire it the head of the golem and destroy it. The Rover tackled me from the sky and I fell off and landed on a rooftop then the Rover landed on the very rooftop. My armor didn't even chip from the fall. The Rover was dead silent then it shot an energy beam which I smacked away then I ran,did a solid baseball slide,took up then delivered an upper cut on the snout. The golem fired a radioactive beam which pushed me further away. I flew right back then fired energy beams at the golem that tried making a mess of me. I started fighting both the golem and the Rover at the same time,navigate the floors of the building. Dominic had a difficulty fighting now as Eric was now in combat. The leader kicked him right in the gut then threw him over a car and the fought on the roof of the car. Eric's reaction time was very impressive,he saw and he deflected then attacked. Eric was schooling Dominic whom was being beaten in the fight. Eric then throw a grenade into his hands and it went off. Dominic was hurled a away but nor burned not amputated. Eric leaped over and landed a knee right into Dominic's chest. The wizard would tumbled over and hit the sidewalk. Dominic was still alive but he was injured,he broke a rib and he was bruised. Umi was in the silent library and walked up to Conrad who guarded the remaining hostages in a planned escape. She spoke in whispers.

" You can't just waltz out of the library." she said to Conrad.

" Reason being?" he asked her.

" There' Railway Men. They are like puppets of Hannah that are made from railway steel." she said.

" They don't sound so friendly." said Conrad.

" They are programmed to subdue. There are ways to stop them,I just need to cook up a vile." she said.

" Okay,how long will it take?" asked Conrad.

" A few minutes." she said.

" Cool,I'll alert the others about the new plan." said Conrad then he called in their seated soldiers.

" We need to wait a few more minutes to execute the plan." said Conrad then they nodded. Umi began silently mixing around potions to create a vile that could be effective on the Railway Men. Milo continued fighting Lucias but now Seals were used,his shield was placed down and the sword was rested.

" I'll be the new Rafin." proclaimed Lucias. Milo swung a punch at him,the self-proclaimed new Rafin swung a punch and their fists collided. The impact created a gust of wind that transcended and erupted. Milo flew away and landed on the windscreen of one of the military cars. The golem was a tussle for me,it was radioactive and spewed vicious attacks. The Rover was tackling and acting out like a German Shepherd. I kept using more punches then I was using wizardry then I thought of how I needed to unlock my great life force. I wrestled the Rover,locked its snout. The golem would swing at both of us so I flew up with the Rover which I struck the forehead of the Rover with my elbow and allowed it to fall. I conjured a spell called "Storms From A New Nation",a spell that was first used by the Greeks to defeat Troy. I looked around and knew how dangerous the spell would affect the entire city so I decided to abandon the plan. The Rover needed to be completely dealt with however. I landed on the floor and I had a grenade on my left hand now. Umi was finally close to wrapping up the vile,Conrad helmed questions,too many questions and had follow-up questions regarding the concoction. The soldiers handed over their magazines and bullets to Umi whom the ammunition into the vile which had a great volume.

" How the heck did manage to make so much of the one of the vile? It could fill an urn." said Conrad. Umi showed her a tube with a transparent liquid and something else.

" Oh,yeah,it's a sworn secret." said Conrad.

" Yeah,only meant for wizards to know." said Umi then one of the Railway Man saw us.

" Shit." cursed Umi and fired a Seal at the Railway Man which froze the animate structure,Umi quickly loaded a few bullets doused in the vile. Umi aimed at the Railway Man. Waited. Every Railway Man was 7 feet and they were like wooden puppets - made out of railway steel as mentioned. Before Hannah turned heel,Railway Men were used

to save people from wreckages,move away heavy objects and even lift people to safety. Railway Men were an open secret to the world by now but they were programmed to help destroy the resistance that originated from its own roots. The spell that Umi used originated from the tribe of Time wizards and she quickly integrated into her artillery. However,for the spell to work,mirrors needed to be in abundance. Mirrors captured time somehow and they were the medium to letting the spell work for Umi. She fired only bullets and the Railway Man was completely destroyed,the sounds of the bullets being fired caused their whereabouts to be figured out by the other remaining Railway Men.

" Awesome,the vile works,you need to quickly reload your guns and use the bullets affected. I'll work on a way to stabilize the capsule and also secure the Cradle." she said in a hurry.

" Whoa,whoa,whoa..." said Conrad.

" You only have a minute to strike. Keep the hostages safe." she said then leaped over a few shelves and began to make her way to the capsule which was attached to Gexir's cradle. Conrad met up with one of the Railway Men then shot directly at it multiple times. They had limited ammunition. Dominic was still in the mercy of Eric whom showed a broken brow and a serious face.

" You don't even know what kind of wizard I am but you decide to fight me without knowing what I am capable of." he said. Eric remained silent and kept pacing at him then he the opportunity to finally cause his demise without remorse then the Sun dimmed a little. Meanwhile I was still being chased by the shapeshifting Rover which was being followed by the jogging Golem. I fired beams at them and kept missing. The golem was almost destroyed,I decided to gain altitude I started going up into the clouds. The Rover followed and now,the golem would walk into a trap. There were multiple missiles being fired at it then the golem was blown apart,it fell on to the ground,groaned. The soldiers would keep shooting at the golem,throwing more grenades and then a tank drove right through the golem and it completely destroyed. There was. A mystery around the tank that simply ran off. No one from the people involved in Plan 47 knew who was the driver of the tank. Keith threw a few more grenades to the golem's torso then used a few bullets and rested his team.

" Okay,people,the golem's history. Xavier will manage to destroy the Rover. Everything will work out. We just need to make sure Aquilla makes a run for it." said Keith.

" That tank is dangerous and we don't know who is driving the tank." said one of the soldiers amongst them.

" Whoa,whoa,whoa. Let's deal with one crisis at a time. Right now,we destroyed the moving statue that tried to destroy us. Cool. Xavier is trying to get rid of the Rover. Now,the new crisis is the book. Aquilla is not in the clear just yet. Let's assist her. Whomever was in the tank means well." explained Keith,they all agreed then they started making their way to Aquilla's whereabouts. The tank crashed on every car,it was reckless. In the high altitudes,I began to lose track of my speed,nothing changed about the Rover. The mechanical beast could withstand the elements. I thought of activating the escape hatch. Leave Earth to fend for its own and be safe,the thought crossed my mind once since I was prepared to sacrifice my life for the sake of humanity once again and it only brought headlines but never honor. I was about give up on Earth while I journey to outer space,swirling around,outpacing the Rover and contemplating on my future. I heard the voice of my cosmic mother loudly in my mind. She was telling me to give in and let Earth be. I just rerouted my thinking and I was almost in outer Space and the Rover was still not subdued. I was breathing heavily and my armor was in the right condition. I began passing out. The Rover gained momentum and shot at me. I got struck by the energy beam and I got hurled nearer to space. I was going to seal my own fate if I didn't use a Seal soon. I was admitting to the revelation that I needed to welcome death to earth. Let the circles of life complete and live on the Moon. However,I was stubborn,I was reluctant,I was decisive over how I saw my depression. All of that was a step. A step in big shoes. A step that needed me to be free. If the path led to more money,grasp the currencies of the world. Obligations would force me to rethink my legacy and better the world. Now,I channeled my thinking to a greater horizon. I conjured "Storms Of A New Nation" again. I looked to the Rover and used the spell on the beast. The gusts of wind went after the Rover. They started to crumple it. The winds were strong and they were wrestling the Rover in the high altitudes. It was growling. I easily defeated the Rover. The Rover tried to pry to leave the dome of the gusts. I clicked out the Seal,the gusts of winds would seeth into the joints of the Rover. I planned to destroy the Rover limb for limb,the Seal sped up and clched my palm. The force of gusts began to break the joints. Lucias was lost track of,he vanished into the midst of the war,Dominic was still fighting Eric and Hannah woke up but ran of somewhere. I increased the force of the winds then the Rover was completely destroyed right in front of my eyes. It now ceased to exist. The rubbles and elements of the Rover fell from the skies. I still floated in the sky,I was tired,my energy was drained. The spell depleted my life force,I tried staying afloat then I fell and plummeted to Earth.

" Uh,Xavier,I don't remember falling lifelessly towards Earth being a part of the plan." warned Umi. I couldn't answer to her. I was swirling around the skies the I snapped out of it then took of my helmet quickly,wrapped it under and tried to fly again. This was futile. I needed help.

" Milo! Do something!" said a panicking Umi. The Reality Wizard was out of the wreckage that he was in, trying to track down a missing Crimson whom was nowhere near the library. Milo couldn't collect his mind fast enough to weave a spell.

" No! Just stop Crimson!" I said in the mental link then I swirled around then my legs faced the surface of the Earth then I cringed my body and I halted in mid-air by a thread of power. The Cruiser 47 was finally being powered and it lifted from a rooftop.

" Help is on the way, the Cruiser will take you." notified a soldier. The Railway Men were hunting and they were being hunted. The library was a warzone on its own and Morshower and Eva were in the very zone, the Railway Men were countless and their ammunition was running out. Conrad would get punched by one of the structures and fly across the room and crash into the shelves. He was completely fine. Conrad stood up then had a comment to share to Umi.

" We need to make more of the vile. We are outgunned, outnumbered." said Conrad.

" Order an air strike. We can use mirrors to survive." said Umi. Conrad laughed sarcastically.

" We have a nuclear capsule we need to get rid of firstly." said Conrad. Umi firstly did the readings of the capsules. The numbers were staggering. The energy was induced using Dominic's spells, the casing could only withhold the energy for a few more minutes or it will start to spark, break it apart and all breaks loose.

" Oh, no." she said.

" What?" asked Conrad.

" We are almost out of time." she said then a Railway Men tried to hurt Umi then she ducked then Conrad shot at it using the few remaining enchanted bullets. The tank was making its way to the library. It crashed everything, either it was military cars or property. The tank was in a hurry to get to the library. It was not taking into note of the damage it made. I was lent power from the cosmos so I could stay afloat in the air, I placed my helmet back on. I could see the Cruiser, I felt like I needed to meet it halfway, it was very near. The hatch doors were opened, Aquilla and the husky Winter was awaiting me to land there. She had the book wrapped in her arms and the husky was just looking to me. My father's voice ran in my mind.

" You should have joined the cosmos." he said in my mind. I didn't listen and just slowly flew near. On the streets, Milo had no leads and Dominic ran into Milo in the streets.

" Crap, it's just the minion." he insulted Dominic.

" Eric, I found him" said Milo then Dominic was too beat down however.

" Truce?" he offered to Dominic. Milo shook his head then he tackled him down on the floor and stood up.

" Stay down, justice finally caught up to you." said Milo and began walking slowly away.

" And you think that karma won't grapple you someday?!" he viciously asked.

" Hell nope, I'm sanctified." said Milo whom was bragging.

" Sanctified or not, this city will die." warned Dominic.

" Not yet, there's still time. Now, I got to finally beat the evil out of Lucias." said Milo and he ran off, looking for Lucias. I landed safely on the hatch doors.

" Are you okay?" she asked me. I took off the helmet.

" Yeah, yeah, the plan is working but the nuclear bomb is a wildcard." I said to her.

" Is there a way to stop it?" she asked.

" Honestly, I don't know." I said then the hatch doors were getting closed slowly. I was panting, I was trying to find a new way to stop their plan.

" I need to sacrifice myself. I can overload the charges of the capsules then Milo can send me and it to Oblivion." I said.

" No, no, no! You aren't going to do that, that's crazy!" she complained.

" It can work." I said peacefully.

" I want your plan to work but I don't want to lose you." she said.

" I know but if I don't then Cunningham's death would have been in vein." I said.

" We can still try Phase 4 of Plan 47." she pleaded.

" It's okay." I said then gave her a hug, she kept on squeezing me tighter.

" I'll be okay. I'll be fine. You will all see another Summer. You can all publish my manuscripts in my name.

Knights Run is my home. My parents raised me well, they made me into the good man that I am. My brothers helped me stay sanctified and you taught me real love. I'm content even if I pass 5 minutes from now or 50 years after this." I said then Aquilla accepted my path.

" If it leads to that, I'll miss you so much and I don't know if I can go on living without you." she said.

" You'll learn. You'll be alright, I promise." I said then she clinched on me. This hug felt like it was like the last hug I'll ever share.

" I love you,Xavier." she said then the moment concluded. I needed to contact Umi and Milo using the Vulcan Wire.

" Alright,listen up. I have a plan that will work." I said.

" You said that one before." said Milo whom was looking around.

" Plan 47 is working well." clarified Umi.

" Yeah but this one will need us all to be in the library." I said to them all.

" Okay,okay. Let's run with it. Looks like Crimson is gone." notified Milo.

" Gone or hiding?" asked Umi.

" More liking,he's plotting." I said.

" Well,look,get to the library already,we don't have enough time." said Umi.

" Then make time." I said. Umi started thinking of Seals that could delay detonation.

" I have a spell to use. It's called AWriter's Summer." she said.

" What aee the risks?" asked Milo.

" It works or a quarter of the city will blow up." answered Umi.

" Yeah,I can definitely see that wizardry is dangerous." I said to them.

" It's incredibly cool though." said a jumpy Milo.

" Yeah and now it's twisting the fate of humanity." said Umi.

" Okay,let's wrap this all up." I said.

" Yes,Son of Green,descent of Bonaparte." said a humble Milo.

" It was an honor working with you all." I said then we all got disconnected.

" Ditto." said Umi.

" Xavier,I'll teleport to you in just a few seconds." said Milo then the talk ended.

I had to update the crew and so forth. They were all nervous with how I could diffuse the situation. I was building up a migraine from all of this.

" Alright,Milo will teleport to get me then I'll be at the library. Upset the nuclear power then be sent Oblivion with it." I said to them.

" Where's Lucias?" asked a soldier.

" You don't have to worry about Crimson anymore." I said to them. Aquilla was standing far apart,near the hatch door while Winter walked peacefully to me. She still had the book.

" Aquilla?" I asked. She was close to crying. I reached out my hand to her and she was staying strong.

" Try using the book." she said.

" There's nothing that the book can do to help us now." I said.

" It's magical,it has ideas. It brough you here and it can save us all." she said.

" I know. I know. The Property Of Carter is great but there won't be enough time." I said.

" There's all time. We make time. We made time for each other. Now you wanna give up in the nick of time. A nick has a value. You can start to grow a garden and create a library in the very same time." she explained. I heard her and I could clearly see sense in her fear too. Before I could speak there was a violent thud on the Cruiser 47. We all shook to the floor and Aquilla landed on her behind. Winter landed safely on his paws then we heard metal straining. Wind gathered in the very space between her and I. Someone was using teleportation.

" Milo's here!" I said in a jitter. The person emerged and he struck me with a deathly spell which damaged my armor horrifically. It was Lucias and he had a few words.

" Green,you are alive,I see..." he said then Aquilla tried to struck him with the book and Lucias grabbed the Maxima.

" Incredible. I heard that the book is a great read." he said while cliching the books. I was still in shock,the spell caused more damage since I never wore my helmet.

" And I see that it was held by a great girl." said Lucias,she tried pulling out of his grasp but it was all futile. I had to snap out of the trance and stand up.

" Leaver her out of this." I said to the villain. Lucias just scoffed and wanted to hear a reason.

" And why is that,rebel?" he asked.

" Because this fight is between you and me." I said while getting to my feet,I was still recovering my powers. I wasn't strong enough to fight back using wizardry yet.

" This is a war,Green. She's your everything. I know this. I can sense it. Now...in this war,we fight for everything. So I'm going to take her away from you." he said with a smirk. Aquilla and the book started to vibrated. They were being teleported.

" No!" I shouted and tried to stop him by tackled him but he fired a Seal at me which damaged the armor more and hurled me right to the control deck then the power of the Cruiser would shut down. I wanted to get up and just fight

back right there but then something was said by my nemesis that actually made me hate him a lot more than I did then.

" You know,you aren't God,green. You can't save yourself,your girl and the world in one day." he said then they all teleported. I was still too weak to create spells and run down to them. The Cruiser was falling. I needed to save it. There were parachutes however. Milo never ran into problem. No Railway Man,no Hannah either yet he saw the Cruiser falling. Milo had a choice - get to the library,diffuse the capsule and send the entire library to Oblivion or save the Cruiser using Chronicle's Way. He was only a few feet away and his energy were running low too. He decided to try to help us,ran a different direction,teleported a few times to save time. I stood up and saw how calm Winter was.

" The answer is so easy,son..." hinted Bremagh. The pilots waited on something for me to find a solution. Winter walked up to me,I felt energy surging around me and I could conjure a spell to rescue everyone in the Cruiser 47. I saw a Seal start to formulate on its own. It was a water-based spell and it could save our lives. We only had seconds before it crashed.

" Well,I have to trust the one person who resents Earth then." I said then fired on the floor of the Cruiser. Something I never expected happened.

" Oh,shit!" I said before the spell worked. The spell transformed the Cruiser into actual water. The water gained the speed of the Cruiser meaning that was being used. The force of the water was strong enough to break the glass of the floor we could have crashed it. The pilots were carried by the current next,the soldiers followed then it was Winter and I. The spell sacrificed the Cruiser since it was no longer there. We were all damped,had water all over and I simply stood up and checked on everyone.

" Is everyone okay?" I asked then their responses were all positive. Finally Milo teleported to the very floor. He was ghastly baffled.

" Um,where's the Cruiser?" he asked.

" Well,it turned to...um,water." I awkwardly said.

" You turned an innovative aircraft capable of cosmic traveling into mud puddles?" he asked me.

" Either that or it could have been completely wrecked." I said to him.

" You have a good point." he said.

" There's not enough time. Lucias has Aquilla." I said.

" We have a bomb to diffuse,Xavier. We need to focus on that." said Milo.

" He has Aquilla and the book. Meaning that he can still create the spell and it will eradicate all of the humans on Earth." I said.

" Well,we all know exactly where to find him now. We need to warn Umi." said Milo. Meanwhile Umi was still readying her Seal it meant that she could only focus on only that or we'd be doomed.

" This is probably more stressful than when I got my first pimple." she said to herself then three Railway Men closed in on her. She still had the vile so she threw three beakers at them,they spilled then she shot them multiple times and they were destroyed.

" Can this day end already?" she said. Hannah emerged again right behind her then she hit the back of her head and Umi fell to the floor,she wasn't unconscious though and had more insults to say to her.

" Really? In the back?" she said then stood up. Umi never forgot about the Seal,she kept it active while she had another confrontation.

" None of that matters." she said to Umi.

" Yeah,Milo was right about you and your reservations." she replied.

" Which is why you joined the humans." she said to Umi.

" Nope. I lost my home once. It wasn't easy,heck - I still remember the day it happened. It's why I want the humans to keep their home." said Umi. The speech was touching,Hannah cared less however There was a teleportation happening and Lucias was present,along with Aquilla whom was being threatened by the same Seal that strangled Milo in the night I discovered the book. Speaking of the book,he had it safely in his possession. The Seal was aimed right at Aquilla and she was staying calm.

" Finally. We can finally restore the integrity of Earth." he said when he got here. In the midst of the fighting in the library,some people managed to run out. Eva saw her cousin then elected to stay behind. She was stunned.

" Lucias,you don't have a point to prove anymore." said Umi.

" A point? You think that I'm threatened by my mentor now? Like I am still haunted by all of that?" he asked.

" Yeah,bluntly so. You are not like your teachings." she said. Lucias just laughed.

" I need to make history now. Now,scram Umi." said Lucias.

" Wait? We are just going to let her go?!" asked an enraged Hannah.

" The capsule is unstable. You try to use it and we will all be blown up." warned Umi.

" Well,that's where you fit in,you are going to use your spell to stabilize it then I can finally finish my plan or Aquilla will die." instructed Lucias Umi sighed once.

" I'll do it." answered Umi. In the time this happened - Milo,Winter and I made our way to the basement which had Eric's car. We got there by feet,started the car and drove off to the trajectory of the city.

" Do you think that Lucias already killed Aquilla?" asked Milo.

" Nope. Lucias still needs Aquilla for something regarding his plan. Something that is a key to everything." I explained.

" She's alive then. Still breathing." said Milo.

" For now." I said then took a hard right,we were at the street where most of the chaos erupted,passed in between cars and so forth. The tank emerged behind us.

" The tank is following us." said Milo.

" Yeah but it's not driven Lucias,Dominic or Hannah. They are all too focused on the capsule." I said.

" Yeah I took care of Dominic too but the tank is gaining speed on us." said a vigilant Milo. I looked to the rear view mirror - saw how it was getting nearer and nearer to us then Dominic stirred up trouble. He was agitated,he was boiling mad and started using spells to destroy the military cars and send them into the skies - right at our trajectory. Dominic stood in front of the library steps and was completely zoned out in creating a mess. The evil voice visited him and told him to not fear death,the cars were flying right to us.

" Whoa..." said Milo then I kept steering,dodging the carnage and colliding with the tank,the tank worried less,it toppled over the cars.

" Dominic has gone crazy. It's the power." commented Milo. I looked to the back seat and I still had the powered helmet which wasn't damaged by the assault of Lucias' spells.

" Xavier,what are you thinking of doing?" asked Milo.

" I have no ideas yet. My power levels are still low. I could create a spell though." I said.

" Yeah and turn Eric's car into water too?" asked Milo. I reserved my life force for now. The cars were being obliterated. The tank still followed us.

" No. Just a few gusts and perhaps a flood will do." I answered. I kept swerving around,avoiding the descending cars.

" Save up your power. I guess we can hit Dominic with something more radical. Hit him with the car!" suggested Milo.

" Nope. No,no,no. I know Cunningham wouldn't have wanted me to avenge him in that way." I said. The nozzle of the tank shifted and began aiming to to the library steps.

" Well,such nobility. Kudos." said Milo.

" So this is the wrath of Dominic?" I asked while we were only about a minute away from crashing into him.

" Yeah,the brute has had it. Those are just outlashes,his default spells when he is scared." said Milo. Soldiers tried shooting at him but the bullets fired were all repelled,they became stray then they endangered civillians.

" All soldiers,back down." I ordered using the radio transmission. We were close to Dominic and then he spotted us.

" The tank stopped." notified Milo. I halted the car,looked to the back. It simply stood there. It wasn't moving.

" Yeah. After a run of tyranny and mayhem. Destruction,a whole set of destruction - the tank decided to stop." I said in a ghastly tone.

" Who the heck is the driver?" asked Milo.

" I don't know but it's about damn time we found out." I said. Dominic was running low on his energy levels. He even had to rest for a few seconds.

" I'll get rid of Dominic,you'll have to play cop and get the name." I said.

" I need a gun." said Milo. I handed over a real gun.

" Okay,you don't play jokes." commented Milo then he took the gun.

" Now,let's keep everything simple. It shouldn't take more than a minute." I said then we all went out of the car. The husky followed me. I was slowly walking to him. Milo conjured a Seal and then he aimed the gun at the tank. The tank's nozzle didn't move. Milo used his new sense and saw across the tank. He could see whom was driving the tank. I sensed what Milo saw then I knew how we can easily get rid off Dominic. I just had to stall him for a few seconds.

" Wait!" I shouted to him. He actually listened.

" I have a cop joke. It started at the library. So it's best if it ends..." I said. The tank aimed at my trajectory,Milo snapped,I got teleported then the tank fired at Dominic. The impact struck and sent him flying through the concrete walls of the library. I got teleported right in front of the tank. Dominic's body crashed eerie onto the bookshelves. Lucias looked to his old ally laid to waste and catching his last breath.

" ...at the library." I said. Lucias grew more enraged but kept bottling things. The voice visited him.

" Don't let them take everything for you,young one..." said the voice. Umi saw how distant and different Lucias became.

" Be a fiend,free the humans..." said the voice then it faded away. Hannah walked to Dominic and cradled his body. She tried sensing vitals from Dominic's body - he was cold.

" Dominic's no longer with us..." said Hannah. Umi was shattered by the news but she kept it to herself for years. In the outside world,Milo and I applauded at how we were able to defeat Dominic.

" Great,now we only have to get Johnson and Crimson." I said then the gears of the tank being spinning. The top door of the tank would lift up and then the mysterious driver would get out.

" How is he possibly alive?" asked Milo. It was detective Cunningham. In the flesh. He wore a white shirt and black pants. He had a smug look on his face.

" Finally..." said Cunningham and he leaped down to the ground.

" You're home?" asked Milo,Cunningham nodded.

" Sadly,home is being threatened. And it might blow up into smithierins." I said.

" Well,let's get to it. Save Knights Run." said Cunningham.

" But how are you still breathing?" asked Milo.

" I'll explain all later,for now - we need to get things done. Eric and the entire will sweep for any hostile Railway Men in the city. The three of us have to stop Crimson." I said.

" I don't stoping Crimson is a problem..." said Cunningham.

" Then what is?" I asked.

" You know what the problem is." said Cunningham.

" You only have been around for a few hours since you bit the dust and you started with the riddles." said Milo.

" I'm still Cunningham and I'm still trying to help. Xavier,you need to accept whatever happens today. Fail. Win. Die. Live." said Cunningham.

" I got it." I said. A new question arrived.

" How the Hell are we going to get to the capsule?" asked Milo.

" I got one more cannonball." said Cunningham.

" How did you get the tank?" I quickly asked.

" That's a story for another time." he answered.

" The cannonball needs one spell." said Milo.

" Let's get to it." I said. In the library,the Railway Men found someone. It was Eva Moore,she was kindly escorted to the place where the capsule stood.

" I guess we found another one from her family..." said Hannah.

" We can make more room." said Lucias.

" Room for?" asked Eva.

" More coffins." said Lucias. Umi was almost finished.

" It'll be a grand funeral. It'll be a play. I am about to pay homage to Shakespeare as a sacrifice. Then,I will be influential." proclaimed Lucias.

" You sound like a failed hero." said Umi.

" Patience,Umi. We shall see something blossom. Something grow. Something will materialize." said Crimson. Umi was about to stabilize the capsule.

" You can do what you must now." said Lucias. Umi nodded.

" This is all for the best." said a confident Hannah.

" It's for the world." said Hannah. Umi heard something flying to their trajectory from the outside world. She knew how she needed to duck down.

" Survive this." said Umi. The impact of the attack completely shattered the doors of the library. The spell helped with the destruction. The debris fell. Aquilla bit Lucias's palm then then ran off as the destruction was manifesting. Umi struck Hannah with a spell which sent her into shelves. The dust settled,finally we made it to the library.

" Yeah,I'm here to return some books...and save the world. In that order." I said. Milo had his sword and shield. Aquilla and Eva ran into the book aisles. She ran into hiding with her cousin. Umi quickly stood with us.

" All of this can end,Crimson. Just give up." I said. Crimson just went on his feet then showed us that he found the page he was looking for.

" Time's up." he said. I quickly conjured a Seal then hit near the place he stood. Lucias dived away. I ran to him then we had a fight. Crimson easily got up to his feet and the fight was completely charged. The capsule spiked again then there was a quake. Hannah treaded simply while Milo would run the same direction that Aquilla used to escape into the library. Hannah and Umi were left alone. Umi and Hannah sprinted to each other then they started to fight too. Milo was rushing to get to Aquilla and her cousin Eva to help them leave the library. Morshower was in the

mercy of fate as he stumbled around the library and saw the chaos that erupted. He wasn't in pain because of how he saw the library was being tarnished - he hated young lives being wasted on war. He said down on a pile of books and rested his mind. I tried snatching the book. Lucias would punch me in the face then slam me with the actual Property Of Carter. I would then get up then I'd tackle him and do mounted punches. The capsule spiked again. Lucias stopped the mounted punches and threw a vile on me directly into my eyes. I stood up then wiped it off. I was then struck by a punch into the jaw. Umi and Hannah's fight was more about wizardry at first. Umi just started out measure Hannah and then she struck her with her knee. Umi would throw her into the bookshelf. I had to retaliate, I shot a fire-based spell and he was pushed away by just a yard.

" Going to give up soon?" he asked mockingly.

" Hell no." I said then I conjured a more deadly spell which spewed fire. Lucias blocked it but his clothes got burned. I stopped then the spiking occurred again. Milo ran into so many Railway Men which he dismantled in mere seconds.

" Yeah, this day is going down in history." he said. He felt annoyed, grew impatient but he always hoped for the best. Aquilla and Eva were just running to safety. I told her to do so before all of this occurred.

" You still impress me, Green. Even when we are enemies." commented Lucias. I hid behind a pillar.

" My greatest enemy isn't you, Lucias. You are still a good man. Just give me the book and let Umi stabilize the capsule." I said for the last time.

Chapter 13 - Green, Washington & Bonaparte

I was conjuring a Seal, unlocking a new ancient force. I regained enough energy to start flying again. My armor was still working and I had time. I offered truce to Crimson for the last time. The truce could save Knights Run and it could help Lucias be an idol again. A hero. Umi was also awaiting for Hannah to wake up. Hannah entered the mental state of the Realm Of Thieves yet again. Lucias summed up his answer.

"You'll have to kill me to get the book," he said. I decided to cause his demise. Hannah woke up and her presence scared Umi. Milo finally caught up to Aquilla and Eva whom were catching their breath. He would just share simple words with them.

"You need to relax. You are all safe but we need to get you out of here," said Milo.

"Milo, focus on stopping the bomb. We are trying to distance ourselves from Lucias," she said. Milo then had an idea.

"Actually - I need you for something. It'll work," said Milo. Umi fired mirror shards to Hannah and they were shattered by one look from the tranced Johnson.

"Yeah, I need to make a new plan," said Umi then Hannah would move Umi using her mind and without effort. Umi was sent flying right through 3 library shelves then she hit the fourth one and collapsed.

"I'm still not going to say sorry," she said to Hannah. I finally left the pillar that I was hiding at and looked to Lucias. There was silence then I conjured a Seal, he conjured a Seal too. We fired at each other at the same time then they clashed. The created gusts of wind then I stopped. Lucias halted the spell then I ran to him then tackled him in on the gut then I flew up. Fired a spell, he dodged, rolled over and dashed to the capsule. Hannah halted me using her mind then threw me to the ceiling. Umi tried to fire a reversal spell at Hannah but she halted her too using her mind. Her power was grand. Immenseful. Lucias got to the capsule. He chuckled while Umi and I helplessly watched as he wrapped up his plans. Hannah was without emotions in that trance.

"This is how I pictured - everything. You all have fallen and I cement my legacy," said a panting Crimson.

Cunningham was outside, he was resting with Winter - he had faith in us. I tried to wrestle out of the hold but it didn't work. Lucias got to the page where the spell "New Earth" was written. The spell had a Seal which could be used by anyone. He started to conjure it. The soldiers were too occupied with the Railway Men to take note of Lucias' developments. Hannah became very powerful when she entered the realm. She was at her prime - then she saw her little brother standing at the door. She focused on him. Her little brother wore the same clothes he wore on the night of the accident and he would step closer to the light and he wore a smile then he started trying to talk to her. Hannah was about to erupt into tears. She was convinced of that the generated memory was real. Lucias was almost complete with the Seal and he could render his final phase. Hannah began battling with her human side. She started whimpering as her little brother reached out his hand to her.

"Hannah?!" asked Lucias who noticed that she wasn't okay.

"What is it?" asked Lucias. Hannah couldn't say, she was rapidly losing her power. She was trying to reach out to her brother so she would stretch out her hand to her little brother. This was more than just a hallucination. This was a better reality for Hannah that emerged on its own. Without limits of what is real and what doesn't exist.

"It's my brother. It's really him," she said.

"No, wait, it's a spell. Your brother is dead," said Lucias. The grip was slipping. I could start flying now but I chose to not risk it yet.

"I can see my little brother Axl..." said Hannah in a peaceful tone. Milo teleported behind Axl and then had a Seal aimed to Hannah's gut. He fired at her and she peacefully smiled and it struck her and she collapsed to the floor. Milo sighed.

"Now, she can join him," he said. Umi and I fell to the ground.

"Is she really dead?" I asked.

"Nope," answered Milo.

"To kill her would be inhumane. She is under a lock. She won't break through it right away. Give it, well, months, years," said Umi.

"It sounds advanced," I commented.

"She's brainwashing herself. She was coaxed into everything," said Milo.

"You spare her? She's a seed!" said Lucias.

"She's still human. We proved it. Conrad, collect Hannah and get everyone out of here," I said to him. I flew to Lucias then I was near to face.

"Let's settle this. The winner gets Earth," I said then Pushed him to the shelves.

"Save the capsule!" I said then ran to Lucias.

" I need to kill this rat!" screamed Lucias then he struck me with a deathly beam which damaged my armor again and I was hurled away. Milo snapped both side of his hands.

" Take this somewhere else!" he said then Lucias and I were teleported to the basement of the library.

" Were are they?" asked Umi.

" Don't worry about it,don't worry about it. We just need to take Sleepy Beauty out of here firstly. Aquilla can help us finish the plan." said Milo. I stood up at the basement and punched Lucias across the face then fired a spell at his gut then he flew to the brick wall. Aquilla ran to the capsule with what Milo needed her to get. It was a chemistry book. She had a bookmarked page. The chemistry book was too different.

" Umi,do your bidding." said Milo. I tried to run my knee right into Lucias chest but he ducked in time then I planted it right to the wall. I got injured,it was the very same knee that got scaped weeks before. Lucias managed to recuperate after my botched attack.

" Yeah,that wasn't a bright idea when I think about it now." I said with a sense of physical pain. Lucias waited. I got my knee out of the wall then he fired a beam at me then I was struck by it then I hit the concrete wall. I just laughed when his attack was successful. I was still standing then I clapped my hands then stopped. Lucias looked a lot more desperate,enraged. Lucias created two Seals at once. I was surprised by how Lucias was obsessed with killing me.

" Your power will run low." I told him.

" Die,damn it!" shouted Lucias then he fired both Seals at me. I blocked them by crossing my arms. The beams kept rolling in more damage. I had to wade them them. Lucias only needed to kill me then he can still take over the world. Meanwhile,the Railway Men were halted. They didn't move. They wanted to frial and stop. They were out and down. Hannah's consciousness wasn't attached to them. Sue and Carlos lifted Morshower out of the library.

" Senoir,I get a raise,right?" said an optomistic Carlos.

" Well,after the insurance helps out,perhaps so. Otto is fired definitely." said a disappointed Morshower. At the capsule,Umi use her spell which created more restrains that would hold down the power from running out of control.

" Okay,this won't cure the problem. It'll hold it down." said Umi.

" I can try sending it to Oblivion." said Milo.

" That won't work. Your power won't be strong enough to send it packing." said Umi.

" Unless...I turn myself into an Oblivion bomb." said Milo.

" Guys,focus on what we can control." said Aquilla.

" You are right,Aquilla. We can focus on clearing everyone out of here." said Milo.

" Don't you have a spell for that?" asked Umi.

" Yeah,I do. It involves gunshots in the air and shouting 'Get the Hell out of here!' a lot." said Milo. They just stared at him.

" Yeah,let's just tell them politely to leave." said Eva. They all nodded to the idea. Aquilla had an inquiry for Milo.

" Do you still need me to help you stop Lucias?" asked Aquilla.

" Yes. It'll be dangerous." said Milo.

" That was a given." said Aquilla. Eva got worried,people were moving out simply.Conrad picked up Hannah who was still unconscious and under the spell.

" I'll take her to a safer place." said Conrad then he left.

" Whoa,whoa,whoa...Aquilla,you can't fight Lucias!" said Eva.

" Relax,Milo and I have an idea,it's not much of a risk. Besides,it's an alternative if Xavier can't take him on alone." notified Aquilla.

" Still. Dangerous. You need to leave the building actually." said Eva.

" No. No. No. I'm not just a kid anymore,I'm not naïve and I know why I have these markings." replied Aquilla.

Meanwhile,Lucias was exhausted and dropped down his attacks. I groaned then decided to attack. I flew then punched him right in the jaw of Lucias countless times. I would prominently stop then taunt him then punched him again. Lucias fell to then ground. I received a call. I quickly answered it.

" Hello." I said.

" Good day,this is Taj." introduced the person.

" Good day Taj..." I said.

" Sir,I'm calling to tell you that you are accepted at University." said Taj. I was ecstatic.

" Now that's what I'm talking about! Hell yeah!" I screamed. Taj chuckled Lucias tried waking up then I struck him with a beam.

" Yeah,I'm glad to see that you are happy,Mr Green. Now,the university needs you to be availa-" said Taj then I interrupted him.

" Taj,do you have a TV wherever you are?" I asked him.

" Yes,I do,why?" he asked me.

" Turn on the television now. Go to the news. My city is under attack. Speak soon." I said then hung up. Lucias fired a Seal at me. I fell to the ground. Lucias walked up to me then lifted up and strangled me with his right hand. Something was different. He wasn't in control of his soul anymore.

" I'm still not saying sorry." I said in a meek voice then Lucia jumped,slamming my body into the ceiling. It cracked and this fractured my ribs. Lucias landed on his feet and had a more demented tone in his voice.

" Your world will be sorry. You can't stop me now!" he said then I still kept conscious. I tried to wrestle out of the hold,it was pointless. Lucias' body got charged up then he would jump to the ceiling while holding me up then I crashed right through it. He used my body as a shield. The great Lucias made it out of the basement.

" Oh,no." said Milo who sensed his presence.

" What is it?" asked Umi.

" Xavier's dying." said Milo then he teleported near to where he heard the loud thud. Lucias dragged my lifeless body to a pillar and then took a few paces and aimed the very Seal that was used at Frankfurt. I regained consciousness and I could witness Lucias taking another attempt of killing me. This time,I could not run away nor scheme a counter attack.

" Say your last words,Xavier." he told me. I kept looking around. Milo could see things from a distance,he remembered that very aisle that he fought Cunningham. He sent a bullet to Oblivion. Lucias was never told about the incident.

" Umi,I need the vile." said Milo.

" What? Why?" asked Umi.

" Well,I found a way to kill Lucias." he said.

" What about the capsule?" she asked him.

" That'll have to wait." he told her.

" Milo,it's already unstable." she reminded him.

" Yeah,I know but Xavier is about to die..." said Milo then they halted the talks.

" Yeah,I have my last words ready and let me say them." I said.

" Go on..." said Lucias. I took a deep breath then my life flashed right in front of me. I recalled all of the moments that led to this very moment. I remembered how war was never the answer. It was never tumbled into. We were all coaxed into believing that war was needed. I just started remembering philosophies learned and realized that my last words were meant to place visuals on how humble I am.

" I love Aquilla. I forgive my family. I know that a higher power will always be with me..." I said then concluded. Milo heard the words and he finally believed in the fundamentals of heroics. Lucias was moved but he still needed to kill me,it was all contractual.

" Goodbye ,Xavier." said Lucias then he powered up his Seal. Milo managed to bring back the very bullet that was sent to Oblivion. The bullet flew through the room. I didn't even see the bullet,it was surely that fast if a son of Green couldn't see it. This was a counter attack that even Lucias had to applaud. The seal was conjured on Lucias' right hand and he stretched out his very right arm. The bullet struck his right bicep. Lucias felt the pain and he dropped his Seal. He shouted in pain. I looked at him.

" Lucias!" shouted Milo then he appeared right before our eyes. Lucias looked to him.

" You did this." said Lucias.

" Yeah,practically. It's fate mostly." said a confident Milo.

" You seriously think that the Universe would work against my cause?" asked a vile Lucias.

" Look around you,the evidence is adundance." answered Milo. The Reality wizard was now propelled into just fighting.

" Yeah,you know what..." said a passive aggressive Milo. He ran then he threw a beam which tossed Lucias away. Crimson stood up and Milo used his shoulder to tackle Lucias in the gut with high velocity. Lucias was dropped to his knee. Milo jabbed him right after he fell. Milo kicked him right to the face again. Lucias fell to the ground. Milo allowed himself to rethink. He stayed away from him then conjured a spell in the meantime while Lucias tried standing up. The dark energy motivated him with power. Something that Crimson hid from all of us. Umi got to me first and gave me water.

" This will patch you up." said Umi. Aquilla was with her.

" Umi,I need the vile." said Milo.

" Vile?" I asked.

" Yeah,we all cooked up a vile." said Aquilla. Lucias spoke in a dark voice,a scarred soul.

" You think that you need voodoo and hope to kill me but you surely know nothing much about my borrowed power. My master." said Lucias.

" Master?" asked Milo. Lucias scoffed. Crimson's wound wasn't healing. It was still a weakness,he kept groaning and clinging his own bicep. He was on his feet. He had words to share. I started to get up,Aquilla and the pillar propped me.

" Yeah and after so many decades - he still lives. Let me complete the mission.

" Yeah,no. You are outnumbered and outgunned." said Milo.

" I'm not not outplayed." said Crimson.

" There's no version of the story where you still live after this. There's no way." I told Crimson. Crimson had a few thoughts before saying another word. He didn't reply. He actually agreed with me.

" You are right,brother." said Lucias.

" Say what now?" asked Milo.

" Xavier,you are right." said Lucias. Crimson spoke the honesty of the fight.

" But now I need to die fighting for my cause." added Lucias then he shoot a beam at Milo and the wizard fell. Umi ran to Crimson,trying to use the vile at him. Umi conjured and shot at him but Lucias dodged. I started to walk to Lucias and Umi. I wasn't too fragile anymore. Conjured a Seal too. It seemed more evident that the injury didn't slow down Crimson at all. He has locked horns with Umi and he almost struck her. She kept dodging then one pierced her waist and she groaned. She clinched her waist. The beam didn't damage the beaker. The vile was still intact. I knew how painful it was for her. Umi was stumbling. Lucias tried to strike her again with the same Seal then I used a spell where the winds misdirected his aim completely. I conjured a spell that caused winds to push him away. We heard the energy spike and this blew off the roof of the library. I was actually scared. The radioactivity could still affect everyone. I conjured a spell which trapped all of the nuclear vapors into a sphere that was in the sky. People were clamouring in the outside world. Cunningham and the other soldiers just looked on.

" Yeah. They still have everything under control." said Cunningham. Lucias was only focused on me now,Umi was still preoccupied with learning to deal with the pain on her waist. I calculated how Lucias was fighting us. My observations were based on his ferocity. Lucias was being bullied into being so violent towards us all. He had blindly needed the fight. I started to conjure a Seal.

" Now Milo!" I shouted then Milo would appear from the shelves behind Lucias and place him in a full nelson. Crimson was locked in,he tried to dangle out of the hold which wasn't success at first. I conjured a spell that lifted an entire boulder that was hurled to his gut. Hitting him painfully. Milo was still helming the full nelson on him.

" Umi,now!" I said then she jogged to him with the vile. Lucias' body was still recovering. He seemed lifeless.

" You can let him go,Milo." I said.

" You might regret saying that after a few minutes." said Milo in a tone that would lead to an epic joke in a few years.

" This guy looks dead already." I said.

" Wait,already? He is still breathing." said Milo.

" Yeah but I mean,he's not responsive." I said.

" You went responsive in Frankfurt too but here you are - still alive." said Milo.

" Yeah,I'm alive. He's probably dead. I've seen at least 5 corpses in my life so far." I argued.

" Amongst them - which ones are wizards?" asked Milo.

" That's irrelevant really. It's not like Wizards have different corpses than humans." I said.

Our bickering happened a lot now. Even when the world was in danger. We were bickering over how lifeless Lucias was now.

" Lucias isn't dead." said Milo.

" Wanna bet?" I asked.

" It wouldn't even be fair." answered Milo.

" You guys do know that the capsule can blow up anytime from now,right?" asked Aquilla.

" Point taken. Umi,he is still unconscious. Pour the vile into Lucias' mouth then we can sort out the capsule." I said. Umi scoffed then opened up. The aroma ran into Crimson's nostril then he snapped out of it.

" Oh,bollocks." I said then Milo let him go out of the full nelson.

" You owe me cash." said Milo.

" I'll destroy you all!" he said.

" That isn't news for us anymore." I commented. Taunting him then Crimson surged and hurled all of us away from him. The energy of the surge even broke the beaker that had the vile. Milo hit his head on the concrete pillar. Umi was hurled away to a further distance than me. I was the nearest to Lucias whom was awakened. I wanted to complain about how powerful our enemy was. I had nothing else to say. I ran out of what to do at that moment. The world was going to end soon. I had my palm on a puddle. It was the vile that they concocted to kill...Lucias Crimson. The vile started to affect me,I began to feel weak too but I could still stand up and try to find a way to stop

him. Milo was completely down and out cold. Meaning that the capsule couldn't be sent to Oblivion anymore. Umi was near death and Aquilla was staying strong, she took up a shield to protect herself. I was on my feet again. I had the vile on my hand and I still needed to recuperate.

" You should have been dead already, Green." said Lucias.

" Yeah, but that isn't happenin because I know what I live for." I said.

" That's cliché. We are all dead already." he said to me. The energy spiked again then it tore up the book shelves. I believed that I couldn't defeat Lucias. That all changed in that moment. I could fly because I could fly. It was all one of my ancient forces. The forces make science fictional. I kept unlocking them as I grew. I understood very well how powerful I am. I was more powerful than the former collective combined. Power resonated through defeating depression. You start a new life after it all. You begin to understand that the darkness isn't meant to scare you or always be condenscending. The darkness is more about a mirror around reality. You sense a difference in you. You sense better a lot more. You understand the elements. You actually understand life better. You do right and you become immortalized when you give your heart and soul into your craft. I could finally push the right buttons after all of this mess is sorted. Lucias created two Seals. I just stood there and did nothing yet. I recalled the day that I was dragged into the precinct over a trait. My fingertips and how they outlined the wizardry Seals. I looked to my palm, the vile reached my fingertips. This meant that if I conjured a Seal, I could use the vile to connect to the very spell. I knew how dangerous it was but it could work. I started to quickly conjure a new Seal. It was a race against time. He fired his first Seal, I dodged the first beam. He fired another one at me and I just dodged again. He fired both beam at me then Aquilla jumped in with her shield to protect her. The beams reflected all over the place. Bashed more walls. Lucias stopped using the beams. Aquilla dropped down the shield. Lucias began charging up again, he was about to harness more deathly energies.

" Aquilla, I need to try something now." I said.

" What is it?" she asked.

" Something that I learned from outer Space." I said.

" How many times have you done it?" she asked.

" Well, this would be the first ever attempt." I told her. She looked at me with a sense of worry. Lucias was finally done recharging his power. He could finally destroy us all.

" This is the part where you die now." said Crimson. I threw her away into the side then I made the Seal float adjacent to my palm. Lucias was surprised.

" No. This is the part where you die." I said. Lucias channeled all of his energy into his last attack. I violently threw the Seal to him after I stretched my arm to the back. It flew and gained momentum. Lucias fired his beams. The Seal was so strongly, it easily overpowered the beams. There was point where Lucias stopped, he saw it as a futile attack then the very Seal's rim...slightly cut his right shoulder and then the Seal dispersed. I suffered a hamstring injury from throwing the Seal. Lucias tried laughing then he started to feel the pain. He looked to his right shoulder and saw the cut that originated from the Seal. It was a slight incision but I had a smile on my face. The Seal carried enough voulds of the vile to kill Lucias. The effect kicked in, Lucias was rapidly weakening.

" I'm sorry, brother. I didn't want it to wind up like this." I said as Lucias was slipping away. The darkness within Lucias began to run off from his consciousness.

" You've set me free..." said Lucias in a weak voice. I sensed that Lucias was at peace with dying. He welcomed Death. His body collapsed to the ground - Lucias Crimson was dead. Aquilla was quiet. The capsule surged again. It was causing quakes and more destruction. I recalled that I need to somehow send it away. I began to run back to the capsule. Aquilla tried running with me to it, I halted her.

" Don't follow. I need you to run away as far as you can. I need to try to stop the capsule from exploding." I said. She stood still. I ran there and saw it again. The nuclear power was imploding. I looked on and tried to see if I could contain the blast range. I had a few ideas. I knew a combinations of spells that could work. I was drained from the last fight and ancient force. The capsule was still attached to Gexir's Cradle.

" I can do this." I said. I tried about a dozen spells at first. They were all meant to deal with a fraction of the blast range. I wasn't losing hope so far but I had to admit that the energy I had wasn't even enough for me to live on with. I tried another wind-type spell and then I started to be weak. I only had the energy to conjure only a few more spells, ten at most. I had a call from Cunningham who waited outside.

" Throw a pebble at the Cradle." said Cunningham.

" What?" I asked.

" Just throw it." he said. I took a rock and threw it to the Cradle, it dented then a very, very small fraction of energy funneled into it.

" A person from Knights Run can sense energy. He noticed that the Cradle threatens energy, consumes it when it is threatened. He saw this when the first debris hit the Cradle." said Cunningham.

" I might as well destroy the Cradle." I said.

" Exactly. You only have mere seconds now." said Cunningham. The husky was next to me now. I wondered when it even got to the library. I appreciated Winter's company then started conjuring and shooting beams at Gexir's Cradle. I couldn't do much damage then I was held on my right shoulder and my left shoulder. I looked to my right,it was Milo. He used a spell called Soul Amplifier. I looked to my left,it was Umi and she used the spell mirrored heart. I saw Aquilla who was right beside me and she had a bazooka with her. We knew how this would all of work. Aquilla fired the missile from the bazooka,right after that,it struck the Cradle. I conjured a Seal and using their help,I could destroy the Cradle. The explosion went off. I fired the beam a second early,it broke the Cradle. The explosion was sucked in before it even reached us. It all warped into the shattered Gexir's Cradle. In time. The entire energy that exploded was no longer a threat to the world. We finally saved the world. After a few seconds,we heard cheers from the citizen and military personeel.

" Congratulations,Xavier Green - you saved planet Earth." said the detective. I chuckled and so did Umi,Milo and Aquilla. We were all relieved. I was completely drained. The military personeel invaded the library and contained the broken Cradle. Cunningham walked to us with a smile.

" You can see very well that were aren't dead." said Cunningham.

" Yeah. We cemented our legacies today." I said.

" The world needed Green,Washington and Bonaparte." commented Cunningham.

" But now it's time the world knew the truth about the injustices on Wizards that are caused by conspiracies and politics." said Milo.

" We can get to that a little later on." I said.

" Xavier is right. There's good news. Both you and Umi are pardoned. You have a clean slate now. No need to run away." said Cunningham. Milo and Umi were without a home however.

" Yeah but...we don't have much of a home anymore." reminded Umi.

" Yeah,the Dark Side of the Moon was the nearest thing to a home. Now,we can't get there without the Cruiser." said Milo.

" Then Knights Run will be your home. It will be your new home." I said to them. This was my invitation to the wizards,they felt skeptical at first. They even looked to each other. Milo had questions about the place.

" Well,I,er...I could get the Cruiser 48. That'll take months." said Milo.

" Yeah and we practically need a home before 6 PM tonight." said Umi. They nodded together.

" We'll live here." said Milo.

" But it'll probably be for a few weeks,I could get the Cruiser 48." added Milo. I was laughing,Aquilla held my hand. I looked to her with a smile. We all strolled out of the destroyed library and collected a few books while we walked.

October 10th
0948 hours

A Summer passed and Knights Run was still being rebuilt. The Rhodes family accepted me. My own family spent more time with me. My father and I conversed. My mother would always lecture me on how I needed to be a great man for Aquilla. My brothers kept bragging about how I saved the world too. Life was perfect. I even started attending a university again. I stopped needing therapy and I was freed. Truth is,I wasn't on Earth in the present moment. I was at Bremagh's palace once again with my armor. I wanted to speak to him. My cosmic mother was also there.

" Mum,Dad..." I greeted. The allowed me to speak.

" I know that I have been silent for all of these months. It was the pressures and duties of restoring Knights Run." I said.

" The very town that you grew up in." said Bremagh. I nodded peacefully.

" I saved the world. I got rid of absolute evil and now - I need to work on saving wizards on Earth. That's my new mission. Meaning very well that I cannot take on the path that you planned for me." I said.

" My son. I understand your compassion. Your legacy and your faith in your allies. I understand your growth and your influence. I agree. Perhaps in this awakened time...you decide not to follow your destiny. I shall not force you to. What you insist on is dangerous. It evokes new villains and more troubled times. You decided to look into in the injustices on wizards throughout time - in the attempt of saving the world before it is threatened. That could create a fallout." said Bremagh.

" Yeah,I know. I know what I'm saying will bring new evil. I know very well that Umi and Milo are still learning to be heroes,I know that I almost died a couple of times. I know very well that the world can be cold. I know that I

know enough but I also know very well that...I am Xavier Green and I will better the world." I said. My proclamation placed a smile on my cosmic mother's face.
" Go well,son." she said then I began to fly away back home.

Knights Run
11 Fitzgerald Avenue
1000 hours

I landed back home in time,I was at home again. We had guests. They were family to me now,I heard chatters everywhere I went around the house. I took of the helmet then took off the armor.

" Yeah, I mean, I almost felt like I wasn't going to live." said Cunningham whom was speaking to the children.

" But you died..." said Christoph.

" Yeah...then I was ressurected." said Cunningham.

" I didn't know that Knights Run even had garage bands." said Umi.

" Well,we are still starting up. We are trying to get the right lead guitarist." said Keith.

" Well, I'll support you. I'll be at every gig." said Umi.

" Yeah, my brother saved the world." said my little brother Finn. His twin brother Roy would add on more comment.

" Yeah, my brother defeated the grim reaper." said Roy,I chuckled when I heard this. I was content. Milo walked up to me.

" Yeah, I got a few wizards who actually want us to train them. Most of them are far away." he said.

" We can use the Cruiser 48 to get them. We send them to the Moon. Better them all." I said.

" Yeah, they'll turn out to be great people. I'm actually content with living in this town now." said Milo.

" Yeah, I'm glad you are,brother." I said to Milo. Umi rushed to me and pulled me aside.

" The stars are ready." she said. I became ecstatic. Milo overheard us.

" That's great, that's great!" shouted Milo.

"Milo, the music isn't that loud." I said to him.

"Yeah, I know. I'm just ecstatic." he said.

"Winter!" I shouted then my husky Winter would show up amongst the crowd. He was quite energetic and he wasn't even grumpy anymore.

"Yeah, cool. You got the girl,you get to keep the husky and your memebership at the library stays active. It's all fair." said Milo. Umi and I laughed when we heard him complained.

"That's all fair actually. I mean,you got the endorsement deals." said Umi.

"Yeah, well, I mean,they are worth millions. Yeah,let me not complain." said a quirky Milo. Aquilla walked to us and she was smiling still. She had joy in her soul.

"There she is!" shouted Milo. I ran to her,grabbed her by the arm and sprinted out of the house with her. Everyone followed us. Winter was the nearest to us. We got to the front porch and we saw stars. They were brought closer to us. Were all mesmerized by the beauty of The Universe.

"I love you, Aquilla Rhodes..." I said.

"I love you too, Xavier Green." she said. The crowd heard us and they were sent to tears of joy while the glimpsed at the remarkable aura of the Moon.

"Finally - I am home..." I said. This was just the beginning of my story.

My name is Xavier Green and I am the greatest wizard of all-time...

The Secret Page

Rafin's kingdom
Geographical location unknown
October 10th
Time unknown

In his chambers, he was just pacing to his throne and he was brought the news. I existed and I was leading the ranks at the time. I am was poster child for all wizards and it brought a lot of thoughts to him. Before he could sit on his throne he stopped and turned to his allies.

"Xavier bettered our home planet." said Rafin. They were all in agreement.

"I respect him for that but I want him dead." he added. One of his allies had a warhammer stepped towards Rafin.

"I can get it done." said Hunter. He wasn't the figure that stepped forward. Hunter was staring at his pocket watch when he said what he said.

"He is Elemental. I have gotten the mission completed before so it should go well." commented Hunter. Rafin chuckled.

"He is like me so you are going to struggle a lot." said Rafin.

"Oh, well...I am not doing anything on my birthday. I am up for go against a planet-creating heir to the wizardry throne." replied Hunter. They all got what he meant. A grin on Rafin's face appeared.

"Get it done." said Rafin. They were dismissed then Rafin sat on his throne. As they left, all he could think of is his cause. Rafin needed to cement his legacy.

Gaborone, Botswana
October 10th

A portal conveniently formed and a wizard rushed out of it and he had his backpack with him. He had to keep running. He was being chased by three Rovers that got sent to him. The wizard maneuvered through the traffic and the Rovers ran through the cars without any hassles. Moments later – a giant bird rushed out of the portal then it closed. It created tornadoes it could control then lifted a Rover then it rushed through it and got killed. The gigantic bird kept flying to the wizard. The wizard stopped running and turned to the remaining Rovers and he conjured a seal then fired it at the Rover to the left and it hit it then it turned to stone then exploded. The last Rover charged right to the wizard then he clenched his fist and punched its head off then he exhaled sharply. The bird landed right by the wizard and he nodded at him. The bird was an Elemental and he was his ally. The wizard had a look at the written phrase on a piece of paper he had. It was actually my home address. The civilians all turned to him in awe and he smiled at them. He introduced himself to the people of Botswana.

"Fallout." he said.

The End

